THE

A180,06

HISTORY

OFTHE

REIGN

OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BY ROBERT WATSON, LL. D.

A NEW EDITION.

VOL. 1.

BASIL:
Printed and fold by J. J. TOURNEISEN.
MDCCXCIL

osiore i

ant to

a la la

PHILIP THE SECOND,

MINCO TO DELL

A GOALA

Ch

Gr

on

hur

Spa

and in hei

pall teig

COL

to

CINCIER OF THE STREET OF THE STREET

MON, ILD.

MOTTICE WALL

A JOY ..

Principle of the Arthurstians.

HISTORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOKL

which towned the state of didw

PHILIP II. King of Spain, fon of the Emperor BOOK Charles V. and of Isabella daughter of Emanuel the Great, King of Portugal, was born at Valladolid, on the twenty-first of May, one thousand five hundred and twenty-seven. He was educated in Spain under ecclesiastics, noted for their bigotry, who were appointed by his father to instruct him; and, by this circumstance, several of those seatures in his character were either formed, or greatly heightened, which were afterwards so conspicuous in his conduct.

Charles, who was born in the Netherlands, and passed his early youth there, had, through his whole reign, entertained such a manifest partiality for that country, as was the source of much distaits action to his Spanish subjects. But they were soothed by

VOL. I.

B

I.

the preference which they received from the young prince, and flattered themselves with hopes, which were not frustrated, of obtaining, under his administration, that share of the royal favor, which the Flemings had enjoyed under the emperor '.

His charafter

Philip early displayed fagacity, prudence, and application: and discovered likewise a disposition wonderfully fuited to the religious instructions which he received. His mind, being naturally ferious and thoughtful, gave a ready admittance to all the fentiments of that illiberal superstition, which formed, at that time, the diftinguishing character of the Spanish ecclesiastics.

His first marriage.

At the age of fixteen, he espoused Mary, a princess of Portugal; who died in less than two years after her marriage, in child-bed; when she was delivered of Don Carlos, whose unhappy

fate will be related in the fequel.

Philip continued to refide in Spain, and was intrusted with the administration of the kingdom, till the year one thousand five hundred and forty-He is called eight. At that time he was called by his father into the Low Countries; where he arrived, in the beginning of the following year, with a numerous retinue of Spanish nobles. Upon his entrance into Bruffels, as he was ever defirous to maintain the appearance of extraordinary piety, he went first to the cathedral church, to render thanks to the Almighty for his prefervation; and then proceeded

di

fp

hi

fp

An

by his father to the Netherlands.

teven, externined the

Haræi Annales Belgii, &c. p. 570. Cabrera Vida de Filippe II. lib. i. c. r.

to the palace. After paffing some days there with BOOK the emperor, who, in all his behaviour, discovered that fond affection, which is natural to a person in the decline of life, towards an only fon, he fet out to visit the principal cities in the Low Countries, accompanied by the regent, his aunt, the queen dowager of Hungary .

Nothing could exceed the pomp with which he His reception was every where received. In presents, entertain- there. ments, illuminations, and tournaments, immenfe fums were expended. The cities vied with each other in difplaying that magnificence which their industry had enabled them to attain; and the people gave every where the strongest demonstrations of their attachment

But Philip, in the midst of those scenes of festi- His unpopuvity which were exhibited for his amufement, and which were fo well calculated to gratify a young, ambitious mind, could not conceal the natural autherity of his temper. The Flemings observed. with anxiety, that there was a striking contrast between the father and the fon. Charles was courteous and affable, but Philip, they perceived, was distant, haughty and fevere. The former could speak with facility the principal languages of Europe, and used to discourse familiarly with all his subjects; the latter had declined learning to speak any other but the Spanish tongue, converted

lar manners,

pile to patil

Panten N

0

C

y

as

n,

y-

to

e-

us

to

he

fir

the

led

de

Harzi Annales Ducum Brabantie, &c. tom. ii. p. 651. Antwerpiæ 1623. Lud. Guicciardini, lib. ii. p. 127.

Meteren, p. g.

little with the inhabitants of the Low Countries, and was almost inaccessible to all, but the Spanish nobles. He lived in every respect as he had been wont to do in Spain, wore a Spanish dress, and refused to conform, in any thing, to the modes and customs of the Netherlands .

Their effett on

This behaviour, equally ungracious and impolithe Flemings, tic, made a deep impression on the minds of the Flemings, and created in them a jealoufy of the Spaniards, which they did not study to conceal. Charles having required the States to Swear allegiance to Philip, as they had formerly done to himself, they rejected his request; and refused to acknowledge Philip's right of succession, till he engaged to exclude all foreigners from any share in the government of the provinces. And even to this nothing would have made them agree, but their respect for the emperor, and the awe in which they stood of his power; for, if the distemper under which Charles labored at this time, had proved mortal, it was believed, they would have excluded Philip from the fovereignty, and conferred it on Maximilian his cousin, fon of Ferdinand king of Hungary and Bohemia'.

(

•

n

al

di

be

th

he

di

PF

tic

of

CO

po

and

101

M ent

fro

The emperor's febeme for procuring him King of the Romans.

From the Low Countries the emperor carried his fon into Germany, in order to facilitate the executo be elected tion of a scheme, which he had lately formed, of having him elected King of the Romans. In the

Bentivoglio, Istoria della Guerra di Fiandra, p. 5. In Parigi 1645.

Mémoires de Ribier, tom. ii. p. 219. à Paris 1666.

year one thousand five hundred and thirty, Charles had procured that dignity for his brother Ferdinand; but having now a fon grown up to maturity, of whose talents for government he entertained the most favorable opinion, he repented of what he had done in behalf of his brother; and refolved, in case he would not resign, to endeavour to persuade the electors to annul his election.

But Philip's manners were not less disgusting in Aversion of Germany, than they had been in the Netherlands; the Germans and ferved rather to alienate the affections of the Cheme. Germans, than to conciliate their favor. His demeanour there was equally distant, reserved, and haughty. He suffered even princes of the highest rank to remain uncovered in his prefence; and, in all his behaviour, affected a degree of state and dignity which the emperors themselves had never been accustomed to assume. The Germans dreaded the dominion of one whose behaviour, even when he was courting their favor, was fo cold and distant. They refused to listen to the Emperor's proposal; and they were confirmed in their resolution of rejecting it, partly, by their remembrance of the calamities which they had fuffered, from conferring the Imperial crown on Charles, whose power had proved almost fatal to their liberty; and partly, by their attachment to Ferdinand, joined with the affection which they bore to Maximilian, whose character and manners were entirely the reverse of those of Philip.

0

0

n

d

d

15

1-

Charles was not of a temper to be easily diverted from his defigns; and, being conscious of the great

BOOK

BOOK fuperiority which he had lately acquired, from his triumph over the confederacy of Smalkalde, he doubted not of being able to compel the electors to make choice of his fon, provided he could prevail on Ferdinand to refign. To effectuate this, he applied himself with all that earnestness and ardor which he commonly discovered in the profecution of his schemes. Nothing but the intoxication of prosperity could have inspired a prince of so great fagacity as Charles, with the hopes of succeeding in so chimerical an attempt. Ferdinand himself was in the full vigor of life; and, confidering the declining state of his brother's health, his prospect of the Imperial dignity was not distant: his fon had been educated with the view of attaining the fame exalted station after his father's death; and, from the great popularity of his character, he had just ground to entertain the most sanguine expectations of success. Charles might easily have perceived, that no arguments which he could employ would persuade either the father or the son to forego a prospect so alluring. Accordingly, although he had, on all former occasions, found his brother's behaviour towards him respectful and complying; and, to give greater weight to his present application, made use of the powerful intercession of his fifter the queen dowager of Hungary, to whom his brother was indebted for the crowns of Hungary and Bohemia; yet Ferdinand withstood all his fister's entreaties, and rejected all the offers of compensation which were made to him. Charles had given his daughter in marriage to Maximilian,

1

h fi h th

pi di hi

Co Ex Jul

and intrusted him with the government of Spain, BOOK during Philip's absence, in order to sooth him under the disappointment which he was preparing for him, and to remove him to a distance from Germany, when his father's affection was about to be put to the trial. This young prince was greatly alarmed when he heard of the defign which was carrying on against him; and having left Spain, and returned to Germany, he omitted nothing in his power, to confirm his father's purpose, and to render it unalterable. Charles faw at last the necessity of dropping, for the present, the prosecution of his scheme: and Philip left Germany, much dissatisfied with the electors, and other German princes, but with none more than with his kinfmen '.

2

f

n

.

d

a-

ł,

d.

2

e 3

a-

is is

ry

15

of

es

D,

From Germany he returned to Spain, where he Philip returns held the regency of the kingdom, and acquitted to Spain. himself of his charge, in such a manner as led his fubjects to form a favorable opinion of his prudence, his industry, and his capacity for government. But the contemporary historians have mentioned no particulars of his conduct during this period, that deferve to be recorded. He remained in Spain till his marriage with the queen of England, in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-four.

No fooner was Mary, daughter of Henry VIII. His marriage feated on the throne, than Charles, whose ruling

queen of England.

Lud. Guicciardin. lib. ii. p. 128. Pallavicini Istoria del Concilio di Trento, lib. xi. c. 15. Thuanus, lib. vii. ab initio. Extrait des lettres de Marillac au Roi de France dans Ribier, July 22, 1550.

BOOK passion, towards the close of his reign, was to aggrandize his fon, conceived the defign of uniting England to his other dominions, by the marriage of Philip with the queen. Had Philip declined this match, it was believed, that Charles would have offered himself to Mary, rather than have lost so inviting an opportunity of augmenting his power. But the fon was not less governed by ambition than the father; and readily confented, at the age of twenty-fix, to marry a princels of thirty-feven, disagreeable in her temper and manners, homely in her person, and entirely destitute of every female charm '.

> When Charles found that Philip was not averse to the marriage, he immediately dispatched a messenger to the court of London to propose it; and Mary hesitated not a moment in declaring her consent. Philip's bigotry, which made him unamiable in the eyes of others, recommended him to her. She was ever frongly attached to her mother's family; and she considered how much so powerful an alliance would enable her to execute her favorite scheme of extirpating herely from her dominions.

Objections of the English against it.

Mary's subjects had not the same reasons with their fovereign to make them fond of this alliance. They had beheld, for more than thirty years, that restless ambition with which the emperor was actuated: and they now received a ftriking proof of Philip's inordinate thirst after power, by his agreeing fo readily to the intended marriage, to which fe

b

tl

h

⁷ Ribier, tom. ii. p. 457.

there was nothing but motives of ambition that'BOOK could allure him. They were all well acquainted with his private character, and the prejudices which his haughty demeanour had, a few years before. created against him in Germany and the Netherlands. They dreaded the confequences of having their queen, whose temper was naturally rigid and fevere, united to a prince of so imperious a character. They trembled at the thoughts of the danger to which their liberty and independence would be exposed; and they were filled with the most disquieting apprehensions of falling under the dominion of the Spaniards; a nation noted for their violent use of power in the Netherlands and Italy, infamous for the barbarities which they had exercised over the natives of America, and distinguished, above all other nations, for their bigoted attachment to the church of Rome .

c

a

;

d

0

e r

h

e.

at

1-

of

eh

To quiet these alarms, Charles had recourse to Charles labora different expedients. He prevailed on Mary to to remove them. fuspend her persecution of the Protestants; and to resume the title of Supreme Head of the Church, which she had laid aside some months before. He fent over immense sums of money to be distributed among the members of parliament; and he ordered the marriage articles to be drawn in terms the most honorable and advantageous to Mary and her subjects.

By these articles it was provided, that Philip

Burnet's Hift. of Ref. part ii. p. 284; and Carte, vol. ii. p. 297.

BOOK should have only the name of King; while the fovereign power should remain entire in the hands of Mary; that no foreigner should be admitted into any public employment; no innovation made in the laws and customs, and no violation offered to the rights or privileges of the nation; that England should not, in consequence of the marriage, be involved in any war between France and Spain; that the heirs of the marriage should not only inherit the Netherlands and England, but, in the event of Don Carlos's dying without iffue, fhould succeed to the crown of Spain, and to the rest of Philip's hereditary dominions; and that if the gueen should die without issue, Philip should have no claim to any share in the government of England, but the crown of that kingdom should devolve immediately to the lawful heir'.

His fuecefs.

These concessions were not altogether without effect. They did not indeed entirely dispel the apprehensions that were entertained; and many persons thought that the more advantageous the conditions offered were, there was so much the greater reason for suspecting that Charles and his son had no serious intention to sussiling them. But they surnished the courtiers, and other partisans of the Spanish match, with specious arguments in its desence: and deprived those who still remained averse to it, of any plausible pretext under which they might have procured an association

Burnet's Hift. of the Ref. part ii. b. ii. p. 260. Carte, b. xvii.

against it. This was attempted by Sir Thomas BOOK.
What and others, who succeeded so far, as to persuade several hundreds of the people to take up arms; but this inconsiderable and ill-concerted insurrection was quickly suppressed, and served only to confirm that power of the queen to dispose of herself in marriage, which the malecontents intended to have controlled.

e

ł

d

f

d

d

ut

y

15

H

ρ£

ts

d

r

n

Every obstacle being removed, and the articles of marriage ratified by parliament, Mary now employed herfelf in preparing for the reception of ber future husband; for whom, although she had never feen him, she had conceived fo violent a passion, as filled her mind with the most anxious impatience for his arrival. She was, at the fame time, extremely mortified with his coldness towards her; and complained, that, although she had so readily confented to bestow upon him both her kingdom and herfelf, he had never vouchfafed to write her a letter on the subject, or to satisfy her as to the causes of his delay in coming to England. At length he fent the marquis De las Navas to inform her that every thing was in readiness for his leaving Spain. But before his departure, the Spanish historians relate, that, having visited the shrine of St. Jago in Galicia, he there heard mass with much devotion, kneeling on the ground, without allowing the monks to furnish him with a cushion; and recommending himself to the protection of the patron faint ".

Burnet, p. 262. Carte.

¹¹ Carte, b. xvii. p. 312. Cabrera, lib. i. c. 4.

BOOK He fet fail from Corunna, in the beginning of July, one thousand five hundred and fifty-four, Philip's arrival and arrived at Southampton, after a prosperous in England.

voyage, on the 19th or 20th of the fame month. In a few days after his arrival, the marriage ceremony was performed at Winchester; where Philip received, from the emperor's ambaffador, the inveftiture of Naples, Sicily, and Milan, together with the titular kingdom of Jerusalem; all which Charles refigned to him on this occasion, as a testimony of the joy and fatisfaction which the marriage afforded him, and in order to render his fon a husband more

worthy of his royal spouse".

Ilis behaviour and manners.

Having brought with him a numerous train of Spanish nobility, Philip studied to dazzle the eyes of the English, by the pomp and splendor of his public appearances, and to gain their affections by his liberality. But he could not, with all his endeavours, hide the blemishes of his character. His natural referve and haughtiness still appeared in all his demeanour. He was too much a Spaniard to relish any thing that was not Spanish. He could, on no occasion, comply with the manners of the English. He suffered even the chief nobility to remain in his presence without taking any notice of them; allowed no person to approach him without having previously obtained permission is and thus made himself difficult of access, even

d

ir

g

Te

C

th

CÓ

th

Burnet's Hift. of Ref. p. ji. b. ii. Carte, b. xvii. p. 313. Summonte Hist. di Napoli, libro 9,00, p. 263.

to those whose favor he wished to conciliate or BOOK secure.

It foon appeared, how little he was fatisfied with He discovere that article of his marriage treaty, by which he was excluded from the government. At his defire, and in order to gain his affections, which Mary regarded more than either the interest of her people, or even her own importance in the kingdom, she requested of the parliament to declare him the prefumptive heir of the crown, and to commit the administration of the state into his hands.

Both bouses had hitherto shown themselves extremely obsequious to her will; but they saw now the necessity of putting an end to their compliances. They easily perceived the spirit and tendency of her demands, and considered them as an indubitable proof of her determined purpose to gratify her husband's ambition, without regard to the satal consequences that might follow. They rejected both her requests. Although they had consented to Philip's bearing the title of king, they would not agree to the ceremony of his coronation; and they obstinately resused to assist the emperor in the war which he was carrying on against France 1.

To overcome the prejudices, which, from this His artifices

Apparated A.

f

5

P

h

f

d

C

5

s

S

S

1

1

e

Burnet's Hift. of the Ref. v. ii. p. 288. Carte, b. xvil,

p. 313.
"His carriage," fays Bishop Burnet, "was such, "that the acting him and his Spaniards was one of the great diversions of queen Elizabeth's court."

⁴⁺ Carte, p. 315.

14 HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

fr

n

PI

In

GI

de

to

W

ol

RI

C

C

in

bi

fu

ar

BOOK conduct of the parliament, Philip perceived were entertained against him, he resolved to curb his natural disposition, and to assume the appearance of moderation. With this defign, he obtained from Mary the release of several persons of distinction, whom the had thrown into prison, on suspicion of their diffatisfaction to her government. But there was no part of his conduct better calculated to conciliate the favor of the English, than his protection of the lady Elizabeth; against whom Mary had given such proofs of jealousy and resentment, as rendered the nation extremely anxious with regard to the life of that princefs. It was unfortunate, however, for Philip, that the favor which he showed towards Elizabeth admitted of an interpretation very different from what he expected would have been put upon it. Men were not inclined to ascribe to generolity, in a prince of his interested character, an action to which he must have been prompted by this political confideration, that if Elizabeth were cut off, and Mary to die without iffue, England would be inherited by the queen of Scots: by whose marriage with the Dauphin, both the crowns of Scotland and of England would be united to that of France ".

Persecution of the Protestants. Mary had, in order to ingratiate herself with the people, and to advance the views of her husband, suspended her persecution of the Resormers. But her zeal and bigotry were too violent to be

Burnet, vol. ii. b. ii. p. 287. Carte, p. 316. Camden's Apparatus.

re

is

ce

m

n.

of

re

OF TY

as rd

*

d

ry

en

to er,

ed

th

e, is:

be

th

uf-

rs.

be

n's

long restrained; and Philip was not inclined, either BOOE from principle or temper, to oppose those fanguinary measures which she was now determined to pursue. Courts no less arbitrary than the Spanish Inquifition were instituted; and the same barbarous punishments, which that tribunal denounces, were inflicted on great numbers of persons, without distinction of either age or fex. No person doubted that Mary was of herfelf fufficiently prone to employ those dreadful severities which were exercised; but as all men knew how implicitly she was devoted to her husband's will, they could not help confidering them as the confequence either of his advice or his approbation ". Philip was fensible of the odium to which he was exposed; and, in order to remove or lessen it, he had recourse to the ridiculous expedient of making his confessor, a Franciscan friar, deliver before him, a fermon in favor of toleration ". But notwithstanding this artifice, which was too groß to impose upon any person, and though Philip seldom

Philip's Historian Cabrera ascribes the persecutions to

This fermon was delivered on the roth of February; yet, on the 24th of May following, Philip joined with Mary, upon occasion of Bonner's declining to take all the edium of the persecution upon himself, in writing to that brutal prelate, requiring him to proceed in the execution of the laws against Heretics; so as that, through his good furtherance, both God's glory may be the better advanced, and the commonwealth the more quietly governed. Burnet's Coslection of Records, N°. 20.

d

ir

re

d

li

W

th

be

pi

w

he

tr

of

di

PC

m

hi

no

hi

it

for

th

alt

of

I. appeared openly to act a part in the administration, the prepossessions against him still remained. All his conduct was beheld with an eye of watchful jealousy and distrust; nor was it possible for Mary to obtain any higher concession from the parliament in his favor, than this, that if she should die, and leave issue behind her, Philip should be protector during the minority.

Philip leaves England.

For feveral months, this concession was not deemed fo infignificant as it afterwards proved. A belief prevailed throughout the kingdom, that Mary was with child, and Philip, and even Mary herself, believed it 10. Philip remained in England while there was any reason to entertain hopes of fo desirable an event; which might have realized that power at which he had aspired ever since his arrival in that kingdom. But when those appears ances, which gave rife to the belief of Mary's pregnancy, were found to be nothing but the approach of a dropfy; when all prospect of her ever having children was annihilated, and her anxiety for offspring, joined with her natural fourness and jealousy, had preyed upon her health, and rendered her person, as well as her conversation.

on the 30th of April, a report was spread that she was actually delivered of a son. All the bells in London were set a-ringing. Bonsires were lighted up in every corner of the city. A Te Deum was sung in the cathedral of St. Paul's; and a priest indulged his credulity to such a height as to describe, with great particularity, the proportions and features of the young prince, whom he represented as the healthiest and most beautiful that had been ever seen. Carte, p. 317.

disagreeable;

a-

d.

h-

or

he

ld

be

ot

A

at

ry

nd

of

ed

his

ar.

y's

he

ner

er

ral

th,

on.

fhe

don

ner

l's; to

ires iest

17.

disagreeable; Philip left England, after having staid BOOK in it fourteen months, and passed over to the Netherlands ".

There the emperor was preparing to execute a The emperesolution which he had formed of resigning his ror's resign dominions, in order to pass the remainder of his his dominilife in retirement. At the time of Philip's marriage ons. with the queen of England, he had ceded to him the kingdom of Naples, and the dutchy of Milan; and had little reason to be satisfied with his son's behaviour towards him, after giving so strong a proof of his paternal affection and munificence. Philip, besides resusing to come over to Flanders, where Charles was defirous of feeing him, unless he were invested with some authority in that country, during his abode in it, infifted, that the grant of the Italian States should be absolute and unconditional; and no fooner had he entered upon the possession of them, than he displaced his father's ministers, in order to make room for creatures of his own. This undutiful behaviour of his fon did not deter the emperor from refolving to refign to him all the rest of his dominions. On the contrary, it appears to have been his principal motive in forming this refolution; as it gave him a clear difcovery of Philip's imperious temper, and showed that he had now reduced himself to the disagreeable alternative, of either contending with his fon, or of yielding to him ".

Haræus , Carte , p. 317. Burnet , part ii. b. ii.

L'Evesque, p. 24, 25. Summonte, lib. ix. p. 263. VOL. I.

fo

ar

di

hi

hi

in

W

gı

ac

be

m

th

te

th

fo

th

ftr

a

he

W

to

for

the

th

the

ha

pai

BOOK

Had Charles enjoyed the fame vigor, either of body or of mind, which he possessed some years before, it is probable that Philip's behaviour would have operated upon him very differently, and have determined him to abridge, rather than to augment, his fon's power. But finding himfelf worn out, partly by the excruciating pain which he had long fuffered from frequent returns of the gout, and partly by his incessant activity, and continual application to business, he perceived that he must, for the future, either trust to his ministers, which he had hitherto avoided; or fink ere long under the weight of the government of fo many States as were subject to his dominion. It was therefore become necessary for him to disengage himself from, at least, a part of those cares which oppressed him. If his fon's ambition had been more moderate, or his temper of mind more complying, Charles might have invested him with the chief branches of administration, and have still retained the supreme authority; or, after refigning to him the fovereignty of a part of his dominions, he might have referved the remainder in his own hands; but he forefaw, that Philip's temper would, in either of these cases, have proved the source of continual uneasiness to him; and this he could not, with dignity. avoid by any other means, than by retiring from the world, and making an absolute cession of his whole dominions ".

²³ Ribier, p. 485.

of

be-

ald

ve ig-

ut,

ng nd

ap-

ich

der

as

be-

m,

m.

or

ht ni-

u-

ty

rv-

re-

efc

fi-

y,

m

his

Determined by these motives, he resigned the BOOK fovereignty of the Low Countries in October 1555. and that of Spain in the month of January immediately following. But he retained possession of his Imperial crown for feveral months longer, till he had made another fruitless attempt to persuade his brother to relinquish his claim to the empire, in behalf of Philip. Charles was retiring from the world under a conviction of the vanity of human greatness, yet he was as solicitous to secure an accession of that greatness to his son, as if he had believed that it constituted the supreme felicity of man. His own experience had furnished him with the strongest proof, that dominions so widely extended, conferred the appearance of power more than the fubstance or reality; that they are the fource of continual and distracting anxiety; that they engage the possessor in enterprises beyond his strength, and that the right government of them is a talk above the capacity of any individual: yet he defired nothing fo much, as to load his fon with that burden, which he himself had found intolerable, and under which he had funk long before the period when old age obliges men to quit the scenes of active life. Charles had long fostered that preposterous ambition of princes, which prompts them to the pursuit of power, without regard to the great end for which alone it is defirable, the happiness of their subjects: and it was become impossible for him entirely to divest himself of this paffion, although he was determined never more to indulge it.

C 2

BOOK Vaucelles.

With respect to another part of his conduct at this time, it is much easier to enter into the motives The truce of from which he acted. Previously to his abdication, he had been exceedingly defirous to have peace established with France, in order to give his son leisure to recover his dominions from that exhausted state to which his own continual wars, together with the sums transmitted to England, had reduced them. In this, however all his attempts had hitherto failed. But, having been detained in the Low Countries by the feverity of the feafon, and his bodily diffress, much longer than he intended, he had the fatisfaction, before his departure, to employ his endeavours fuccefsfully in effectuating the truce of Vaucelles: and, before the expiration of that truce, there was ground to hope, that the Leveral points of difference between his fon and the French monarch, would be amicably adjusted. Soon after this, he fet out for his retreat in Spain: where, having buried, in the folitude of a convent. all his schemes of glory and ambition, he seldom inquired, or even suffered his domestics to inform him, concerning what was passing in the world ".

to

n

di th

ar ar ar

an m

Gianone, tom. iv. p. 198.

at res

on, ace on

iftner ed

hihe nd

d, to ng

on . he

he

ed.

n:

ıt,

m

m

23.

S T R

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK IL

NOTWITHSTANDING Charles was difappointed in his scheme of transmitting the empire to his fon, Philip was still the most powerful Philip's monarch of the age. In Europe, besides the united kingdoms of Castile, Arragon, and Navarre, he possessed the kingdoms of Naples and Sicily, the dutchy of Milan, Franche-Comté, and the Netherlands; in Africa, Tunis, Oran, the Cape-Verd, and the Canary Islands; in Asia, the Philippine and Sunda Islands, and a part of the Moluccas; and in America, the empires of Peru and Mexico, New Spain and Chili, besides Hispaniola, Cuba, and many other of the American islands. The mines of Mexico, Chili, and Potofi, were, at the time of Philip's accession, a source of greater wealth than almost all the other princes in Europe

BOOK power and

BOOK II.

were possessed of '. His fleet was much more numerous than that of any other European power. His troops were better disciplined, and more accustomed to war and victory: and they were commanded by the ablest, and most experienced generals of the age.

re

tł

W

W

th

aı

fr

lr

d

d

fi

li

to

th

h

el

G

W

ol

C

m

CC

Such extensive power, and such copious resources, could not but appear extremely formidable to the other European States; especially when they reflected upon the dark, imperious character of the prince to whom they belonged. For although Philip had neither his father's valor, nor his enterprifing activity, yet he was plodding, industrious, and penetrating. He had already shown that his ambition was not less ardent than that of the emperor; and it was the more to be dreaded, as it was concealed under the cloak of fervent zeal for the interest of religion.

State of

But how much foever Philip's power and character were fitted to excite jealoufy in the neighbouring states, there were few of them, at this period, in a condition to counteract his designs. The English had, fince Mary's accession, lost much of that importance in Europe, which they had enjoyed for half a century before. Commerce was either neglected, or oppressed; their troops were undisciplined, and disused to war; and their navy was in the most languishing condition. During Philip's residence among them, they had given

Europe.

Of England.

They brought him 25,000,000 of guilders yearly. Meteren. Meteren 1960 9 563

proof of their native spirit of independence, by BOOK refuling to admit him to any share of the adminiftration; but they had, in every thing elfe, shown themselves tamely submissive to the will of their weak, bigoted queen; and there was ground to apprehend, that, inflead of opposing him, they would be compelled by her to support him, in the pursuit of any violent measures in which his ambition or bigotry might engage him.

ıu-

er.

Cre

ed

11-

le

en

er

al-

or

5,

ly an

be

of

a-

his

IS. A

y

ce

os ir

g

n

y.

He had no greater reason to expect opposition of Germany, from Germany than from England. For whatever difgust his competition with Ferdinand for the Imperial crown might have created, there was no probability that it would ever occasion any violent dissension, or open rupture between them. Ferdinand was not yet fully fettled in the possession of Hungary. He was disquieted with apprehenfions that the Sultan would ere long renew hostilities against him in that kingdom; and, in order to provide against this event, and secure to himself that support, of which, in case it should happen. he would stand in need, he labored affiduously to establish concord among the several princes of the Germanic body, and to compose the animolities which the differences in religion had produced.

Portugal had, at this time, reached the fummit of Portugal of its prosperity and glory. Those discoveries and conquests in the most distant regions of the globe, which had advanced that kingdom to a rank fo much superior to what it held before, were almost completed. But John the Third, under whose government and auspices so great a number of

BOOK 11.

discoveries and conquests had been made, was now in the decline of life; beloved by his people; respected by his neighbours; and only solicitous to maintain peace, and to render his subjects happy.

b

C

d

b

aı

0

di

ne

m

th

Ci

as

fo

no

Danmark and Sweden.

The thrones of Denmark and Sweden were filled by Christiern the Third and Gustavus Vasa. Under the just and mild administration of the former monarch, Denmark was beginning to recover from that exhaulted state to which civil dissensions. the calamities of foreign war, and the oppression of an odious tyrant lately dethroned, had reduced it: while the Swedes, who, under Gustavus, had thrown off the yoke of the neighbouring kingdom. and bestowed their crown upon their brave deliverer, were enjoying under him the fweets of liberty, and laying the foundation of that greatness to which they afterwards attained. Neither of these nations, however, were yet in a condition to take a part in the affairs of the European powers; and the patriotic princes who ruled over them, found fufficient employment in establishing tranquillity within their kingdoms.

Of the Pope's dominions.

In Italy, the dominions of the church, lately much diminished by the grant which Paul the Third had made of the dutchies of Parma and Placentia to Octavio Farnese his grandson, were thut up between the dutchy of Milan on the one hand, and the kingdom of Naples on the other. The fovereign pontiff, therefore, was more dependent on Philip, than upon any other prince. and was much more likely to find his interest in

courting that monarch's favor, than in promoting BOOK

any scheme of opposition to his designs.

S

1-

1.

-1

r

. n

d

d

1,

ρf

ſs

e

e

d

d

y

y

d

e

e

r.

e-

.

n

Cosmo di Medici, duke of Tuscany, had been Tuscany.

greatly indebted to the late emperor for the fovereignty which he enjoyed; and his dominions were, by the emperor's favor and his own wife policy, become fo confiderable, that only the viceroy of Naples, or the governor of Milan, could give him any just ground of uneafiness. Both gratitude and interest seemed to call on that political prince to attach himself to the king of Spain, and to cultivate his friendship.

Octavio Farnese, duke of Parma, had been Savoy, Pardeprived of the dutchy of Placentia by the emperor; and Philibert Emanuel, duke of Savoy, had been stript, in his father's lifetime, both of Savoy and Piedmont, by the French. Without the favor of Philip, neither of these two princes had any

prospect of recovering his dominions.

The republic of Venice, formerly so powerful and ambitious, had, after the league of Cambray, discovered the folly of their ambition; and they now adhered steadfastly to the cautious maxim, of maintaining a strict neutrality in all the quarrels of the European powers; whose friendship, and especially that of Philip, they were folicitous to fecure, as the only means by which the invasions of their formidable enemy, the Turkish Sultan, could be repelled.

From this view of the European States at the Of France, time of Philip's accession, it is evident there was no other counterpoise in Christendom to his power,

in

ni

W

ol

m

of

in

en

in

ele

pr

fal

of

wi

mi

aff

by

ry

fat

of

fo

Spa

BOOK

but France: which was not indeed of fo great extent as Philip's dominions, but possessed such advantages in its fituation, in its people, and in its government, as made it at least the second kingdom in Europe, and qualified it to serve as a rampart of the general liberty, against the power of Spain. Although the frontier of this mighty monarchy did not reach fo far as it does at prefent, yet it extended from the British Channel to the Mediterranean and Italy, and from the Pyrenees to Germany and the Netherlands; and, through all that space, was unmixt with the territories of any other state; lying between Philip's dominions in Spain or Italy, and the Netherlands; and in the time of war, rendering it difficult for his troops in one of these countries, to co-operate with those in the other.

Character of the French. During the reigns of several princes, the French nation had been accustomed almost perpetually to the use of arms, and had never become sufficiently acquainted either with the arts, or with the sweets of peace, to be averse to war. The spirit of chivalry, the heroic valor, and romantic love of military same, which, whilst the seudal government subsisted, proved the source of so many calamities to the kingdom, still animated in a high degree the French nobility; but having taken a different direction, instead of engaging them in hostilities against one another, it instanted them with the laudable ambition of courting toil and danger in support of the glory of the nation and the Crown.

h

n

d

a

r

y

e-

0

e-

h

of

15

n

os

ſe

h

0

y

ts

of

of

n-

y

h

a

in

m

d

d

Henry the Second, who governed this warlike people, had already shown himself possessed of no inconsiderable share of that ardent and ambitious spirit by which his father was so eminently distinguished. He had not indeed the bold military genius of Francis; but this defect in his character was abundantly supplied by his generals; among whom were the marshal de Brisac, the conqueror of Piedmont; the constable of Montmorency, so much celebrated for his heroic valor, and Francis of Lorrain duke of Guise, who had lately acquired immortal honor by his desence of Metz against the emperor.

Henry was formidable, from his connexions His allies.

with foreign powers, as well as on account of his internal refources. The queen of Scots having been educated at his court, and betrothed to his eldest fon, her kingdom was likely to become a province of France. And, in imitation of his father, he had courted affiduously the friendship of the Swifs, and entered into a strict alliance with the Sultan; from the former of whom, he might, in case of a rupture with Spain, receive affistance by land, as he could, from the latter, by sea, on the coasts of Spain and Italy.

It appeared almost from the beginning of Henry's reign, that he had thoroughly imbibed his father's passions, his ambition to recover possession of those Italian dominions which had occasioned fo many bloody wars, and his jealousy of the Spanish or Austrian power and greatness.

Prompted by these passions, he had, in the year

28

one thousand five hundred and fifty - one, taken BOOK Octavio Farnese, duke of Parma, under his protection, in opposition both to the pope and to the emperor. And he had entered into a league against Charles, with the Protestant princes in Germany: than which, he could not have given a ftronger demonstration of his jealousy of the emperor; fince the principal end of this alliance was, to fave from ruin in Germany, that religion, the professors of which he had perfecuted in France with unrelenting rigor The war which was the confequence of this alliance, continued with various success, till a stop was put to it, for a few months, by the truce of Vaucelles above mentioned. By this truce the contending parties were to retain possession of their conquelts for five years, unless their refpective claims were adjusted before the expiration of that term. This was the principal article; and, in virtue of it, not only Metz and Toul and Verdun, which rendered France secure on the German frontier, but almost the whole of Savoy and Piedmont, (the restoration of which the emperor was in honor bound to procure to the duke of Savoy) were to remain in the hands of the French. Charles would never have confented to this condition, which he had rejected when it was proposed in the preceding year, had he not thought it necessary that his fon should enjoy some years of peace. Henry, on the other hand, had the highest reason to be satisfied; yet it was by him the truce was violated. Into this measure, of which he had much reason afterwards to repent, he was drawn, partly by that hereditary ambition, which had

11

le

ir b

PI

of

CC

th

co

ex

he

ze:

pre

pe

and

der

BOOK

11.

impelled fo many of his predecessors to gain a footing in Italy, and partly by the interested counsels of the family of Guise; but chiefly by the solicitations and importantly of the sovereign pontist.

r

.

e

n

ſ-

ń

d

e

y

1-

e

e

0

15

nt

of

f

ce

d

١,

ad

Paul the Fourth, one of the most singular characters of the age, and whose conduct furnished, at this time, a striking contrast to that of the emperor, had been lately advanced to the papacy; after having passed the greatest part of his life either in the study of the learned languages and scholastic theology, or in the austerities of a cloister. Born of the family of Caraffa in the kingdom of Naples, he had in his youth enjoyed feveral rich preferments, and been employed as a nuncio in Naples, in Spain, and in England. But having grown tired of this public life, he had relinquished the paths of ambition; refigned his benefices; instituted an order of Monks, and lived, for feveral years, in strict conformity to the rigid rules which he prescribed them. Paul the Third with difficulty persuaded him to quit his retirement, and accept of the dignity of cardinal: nor would he have been induced to comply with the pope's request, by any other motive, but the hope of contributing towards the extirpation of the Lutheran herefy; against which he had ever shown the most furious and bigoted zeal. He was the oldest cardinal when Marcellus died; and this circumstance had served not a little to promote his election; as it flattered the other competitors with the prospect of seeing, ere long, another vacancy in the papal chair.

But his advanced age had given him neither moderation nor prudence, nor any ufeful acquaintance

q

n

fo

n

p

n

as

m

in

SI

ha N

fre

Sp

th

co

aft

OC

CO

ple

ftr

WI

to

30

with the world. He talked perpetually of the power belonging to the successor of St. Peter, and of his superiority to princes, in terms that might have been suffered in the dark ages of the church, but which, from the revolution men's sentiments had lately undergone, appeared, even to his courtiers themselves, ridiculous and extravagant. In all his demeanour he discovered a degree of haughtiness, that astonished those who observed it; and he began his pontificate at the age of seventy-nine, with an impetuosity and violence feldom to be met with in the ardor of youth.

His Nephews.

BOOK II.

> He had long held a distinguished character for fanctity of manners, and difinterested zeal for the honor of the Holy fee; but having now attained the highest dignity to which he could aspire, and having no longer any reason to disguise his sentiments, he devoted himself, with a blind attachment, to his nephews, and feemed to have no other aim, in the exercise of his pontifical power, than to advance their interests, and assist them in the execution of their ambitious defigns. Unfortunately for the peace of Europe, their ambition could not be fatisfied with the dignities, which, as supreme pontiff, he had the power of conferring; although he bestowed on count Montorio, his eldest nephew, the dukedom of Palliano, of which he had violently dispossessed Mark Antony Colonna; on the second, the government of Rome, with the county of Bagno, and the title of mar-

^{*} F. Paul. lib. v. Onuphrii Panvinii vita Pauli IV. Thuani, lib. xv. c. 12. Burnet's Hist. of the Ref. part. ii. b. ii.

e

it

,

r-

n of

d

of

e

or

e

d

d

i-

h-

10

r,

in

u-

n

as

;;

115

h

n-

.

r-

u-

quis of Montebello; and had made the youngest BOOK a cardinal, and legate of Bologna. But these men aspired at some sovereign or independent establishment, fuch as had been procured by Leo and Clement, for the Medici; and by Paul the Third, for the family of Farnese. They saw no other means of accomplishing their defign, but by difpossessing the emperor and his son of their Italian dominions: and to attempt this, both Paul and his nephews were incited by motives of refentment, as well as interest. The younger Caraffa, formerly a foldier, and one of the knights of Malta, though now a cardinal, having, when he ferved in the emperor's army in Germany, challenged a Spanish officer to fingle combat, Charles had put him under arrest; and afterwards, when the pope had conferred on him the priory of St. Jerom in Naples, the emperor's viceroy had prevented him from entering upon the possession of it '.

Paul himself, during his residence as nuncio in Spain, having acquired the esteem of Ferdinand the Catholic, had been admitted by him into the council of state, and had retained his place there after the accession of Charles. But having, on some occasion, spoken with too much freedom in the consistory at Rome, Charles had testified his displeasure with him, by ordering his name to be struck out of the list of counsellors. Not satisfied with this, he had first opposed his being admitted to the archbishopric of Naples, to which Paul the

Pallavicini, p. 60. Father Paul, lib. v.

Third had presented him, and afterwards, though BOOK Charles was perfuaded by Julius the Third to con-II. fent to his investiture, yet he had molested him in the exercise of his jurisdiction; and had exerted all his influence in the conclave to prevent his advancement to the papal throne .

These injuries made a deep impression on the proud and fiery temper of the pontiff; nor was he folicitous to conceal his indignation. Even in the presence of the cardinals of the Imperial party, he used to inveigh bitterly against the emperor, and to join menaces to his invectives; and would fometimes add, that they might inform their mafter, if they pleased, of what he said.

Their artifices.

It is probable, however, that he would not have dreamt of having recourse to arms, had not his nephews, and particularly the cardinal, the most ambitious and intriguing, employed various artifices to deceive him. They gave him information of nocturnal affemblies held in Rome, by the partifans of the emperor, in which, measures were concerted prejudicial to his authority; they informed him of a detection which they had made, of persons hired by the emperor, to poison, or affassinate both him and them; and they carried him intercepted letters writ in cipher, from which, according to the cardinal's interpretation, it appeared, that some secret machinations were in agitation against him among the Imperial ministers.

1

the

fen

wi Fre

fift

aga H

COL at '

fon

ver for

wit

be

dre

hac

arm dig

clu

fron chu

and

him

be :

his

difr hop

pof

of l

A

Summonte, lib. x. p. 269. Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. 14. F. Paul, lib. v.

h

n-

m

ed

d-

ne

ne

ne

he

be ld

er,

nt

ot

he

us'

a-

he

re

n-

of

li-

m

C-

d.

on

4.

By these and other means of the same nature, they at once roused his fears, and inflamed his refentment; and he at length refolved, in conformity with their advice, to endeavour to engage the French king, whose war with the emperor still subfifted, to enter into a treaty of alliance with him against the common enemy.

Having, with this view, called fuch of his Paul forms courtiers as he confided in, to a fecret conference, an alliance at which he defired the French ambassador, Avan- ry Ilfon, to be present; he informed them of the several plots against him and his nephews, which had fortunately been detected, and lamented that, notwithstanding it had pleased God to appoint him to be the common father of Christians, yet his children, by conspiring to accomplish his destruction, had reduced him to the painful necessity of taking arms against them, in order to maintain that facred dignity with which he was invested. And he concluded with faying, that his hopes of deliverance from the dangers which threatened him and the church, were founded principally on the power and zeal of his most Christian Majesty.

Avanson replied to this discourse, by affuring him that the king and kingdom of France would be ready to devote themselves to the defence of his facred person, and the Apostolic See; and Paul dismissed the assembly, after observing that he hoped ere long to fee one of the king's fons in possession of Naples, and another, of the dutchy of Milan.

Caraffa the cardinal, impatient of delay, im-VOL I.

BOOK

11.

BOOK II. mediately fet on foot a treaty between his uncle and Avanson; and having, without much difficulty, brought it to a conclusion, he transmitted it to the court of France '.

01

te

C

IV

bi

tie

fu

di

to

th

fo

QU

H

ce

th

ex

VII

lo

ref

aid

de

. .

the

we

Gu

wh

ob

the

ful

The most important articles were these, That the king of France should take upon himself the protection of the pope, and all the family of Caraffa: that the pope should furnish an army of 10,000 men; and the king the same, or a greater number, if necessary, to co-operate with the ecclefialtical forces, in restoring liberty to Tuscany, and in expelling the Imperialifts and Spaniards from the kingdoms of Naples and Sicily. And that, in case their arms should be attended with success, the pope should immediately grant the investiture of these kingdoms to a younger son of the French monarch; referving for the Ecclesiastical State. the city of Benevento, with its territory, and an annual tribute of 20,000 crowns; besides an independent establishment, in the kingdom of Naples, of 25,000 crowns, for the count Montorio; and another of 15,000 for Antonio de Caraffa .

This treaty met with fuch a reception at the court of France, as Avanson had given reason to expect. Henry was allured by the prospect which it opened to him of acquiring those Italian domini-

From this treaty it is evident, that however folicitous Paul was to advance the ambitious and interested views of his nephews, he was not entirely under their direction, nor altogether regardless of the interest of the Holy See. Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. 15.

Summonte, lib. x. p. 278.

cle

ffi-

ed

nat

he

Ca-

of

ter

ec-

y,

afe

he

of

ch

e,

an in-

Va-

0;

he

to

ch

ni-

ous

of

n,

ee.

ons, for which his predecessors had so often contended; and was of himself strongly inclined to comply with the pope's proposals. The constable Montmorency, ever bold, and often rash in action, but in counsel provident, circumspect, and cautious, employed several cogent arguments to dissuade him; and was warmly seconded by the cardinal of Tournon.

They observed, that, as the emperor was about to resign his dominions, it was highly probable, that either a peace, or a truce with Spain, might soon be established; they represented how pernicious all those enterprises in Italy had been, which Henry's ancestors had undertaken, in circumstances much more favorable than the present, when the nation was exhausted by a long succession of expensive wars. And they endeavoured to convince him of the imprudence of unnecessarily prolonging war with a prince possessed of so many resources as the emperor, depending on the seeble aid of a pope, at the age of eighty; after whose death, those very forces on which he now relied, might probably be ranged on the side of the enemy.

Henry, who had been long accustomed to pay the highest deference to the constable's opinion, would have yielded to these arguments, had they not been warmly opposed by the duke of Guise, and his brother the cardinal of Lorrain; who slattered the king's ambition, and thereby obtained an easy victory on this occasion over their rival. Whether there was ground for the suspicions which were entertained, that Guise had B O O K

BOOK

IÌ.

formed a delign on the kingdom of Naples, and the cardinal on the papal throne, it is impossible to decide; but, from the interested and ambitious characters of these men, there is reason to believe, that neither a regard to the welfare of France, nor the glory of the king, determined them to offer the counsel which they gave. They knew that the management of the war, and the conduct of all the negociations relative to it, would be put into their hands; and they hoped, if the event were prosperous, to enjoy in Italy, a more independent authority than they could expect to exercise in France, where they must submit to perpetual control from the presence of the king, or from their rivals in the court.

" So fair an opportunity, faid the cardinal, of recovering those dominions in Italy, which the crown of Spain has usurped, ought not to be neglected. It was from the fovereign pontiff, that the French monarchs had originally received their title to the Neapolitan kingdom; and it would not be difficult for the king to affert his claim with the affistance of the present pope, whose family would, by their credit and influence, engage the friends of France to stand forth in defence of a cause which their ancestors had so strenuously supported. And with regard to what had been faid of peace with the emperor, as the prospect of peace was extremely precarious; fo it was not to be supposed, that any benefit that would accrue from it, could be put in the balance with that

th be

in

ag

11

C

tl

h

to

e

Ra fer who the fua

wa foli Ve wa

TI

of bot

it 1

accession of glory, which the king, and the French nation, would derive from the proposed alliance."

nd

ole

us b,

e,

to

w

ict

be

he

re

to

to g,

of

he

be

at

ir

ld

m

fe

n-

ce

ly

en

ct

ot

1e

at

This fpecious, but flimfy declamation, produced the defired effect on the improvident temper of the king. The cardinal of Lorrain, agreeably to his expectations, was immediately ordered to repair to Rome; and the cardinal of Tournon, though extremely averse from the measure adopted, was required to accompany him. Not long afterwards, the treaty was concluded in form, and both parties began fecretly to prepare for putting it in execution.

But Henry foon forgot the obligations which Truce of he had brought himself under in this treaty; and, Vaucelles in less than two months after it was figned, 1555. agreed to the truce of Vaucelles. The cardinal of Lorrain was at that time in Italy; and the constable, taking advantage of his absence, reprefented to the king in fo strong a light, the benefit which would arise from the truce, as overcame the resolution of that unsteady prince, and perfuaded him to abandon those alluring prospects with which he had been dazzled and deceived. The cardinal, after his last audience of the pope, was about to fet out from Rome, in order to folicit the duke of Ferrara and the republic of Venice to accede to the alliance; when intelligence was brought him from the court of France, that, in a conference held at Vaucelles for an exchange of prisoners, a truce, with the condition of leaving both parties in possession of their conquests, had been proposed by the Imperialists. But he thought it so exceedingly improbable that either the em-

BOOK II.

D 3

an

m

of

Ph

kii

ftr

off

an

be

the

fua

wi

mo

fev

wi

of

the

nei

exe

der

tha

tale

the

the

ter

wa

fro

that he still persisted in his journey, and lest his information with the cardinal of Tournon, to be communicated to the pope. It made no greater impression on Paul, than on the cardinal of Lorrain. He endeavoured to make Tournon believe, that such a truce would give him pleasure; but it was an event, he said, to be desired, rather

than to be hoped for, or expected.

Confternze

Not many days after, he received certain intelligence from his nuncio at the court of France, that this event, which he thought fo exceedingly improbable, had taken place; that the truce was actually figned, and that Henry, as well as the emperor and his fon, had fworn to observe it; the first at Blois, in the presence of the count de Lalain, and the two last before the admiral de Coligni at Bruffels. The news of this transaction excited in Paul and his nephews the most alarming apprehensions. They were conscious of having given the emperor and Philip the justest ground of offence. They could not suppose that their conduct had been entirely fecret, and they were now exposed to the refentment of enemies, by whom they must be quickly overwhelmed 7.

His diffi.

In order to elude that vengeance which they justly merited, Paul affected to rejoice, as became the father of the Christian church, at seeing an end put to the calamities of war. Under this mask he concealed his intention for some time,

Pallavicini , lib. xiii. c. 16.

1, is

e

er

of

e-

4

er

1-

at

n-

15

10

:

e

le

n

8

g

d

ir

e

y

V

e

n

5

,

and that he might conceal it still longer, and BOOK more effectually, he fent two nuncios, a cardinal of the name of Rebiba, to the emperor and Philip; and his nephew cardinal Caraffa, to the king of France. He gave the same public instructions to both, and ordered them to make an offer to these princes of his mediation for establishing a folid peace on the foundation of the truce; and to treat with them of the measures proper to be taken for affembling a general council. But the real defign of Caraffa's embaffy was, to perfuade Henry to fulfil the conditions of that alliance with the pope, into which he had entered some widends to bold to

Rebiba was purposely detained in Rome for feveral weeks; but Caraffa, having carried along with him marechal Strozzi, a kinfman of the queen of France, proceeded in his journey to Paris with the utmost expedition. He possessed, in an eminent degree, the art and eloquence necessary for executing the difficult negociation which he had undertaken. And it was not without good reason, that the pontiff, when he reflected on his nephew's talents, still flattered himself with hopes of success.

Upon his arrival at Fontainebleau, Caraffa found His nephew the courtiers divided, as formerly, with regard to perfuades Henry to the subject of this embassy. When Henry first en- violate the tered into alliance with the pope, the constable truce, was suspected of having too faintly opposed it; not from any doubt which he entertained of its inexpec-

Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. 16.

fo

. en

ple

ce

aff

W

CO

ler

po

off

fel

fav

de

Ita

ab

for

un

wa

his

in

ens

no

COL

oth

to

WO

tro

and

his he

raff

1

BOOK II.

diency, but, either from the faithless complaisance of a courtier to the inclinations of the king; or from a desire to have his rivals of the samily of Guise removed to a distance from the court. But whatever ground there was for this suspicion, it is certain that Montmorency had been the chief promoter of the truce of Vaucelles; and that he now showed himself extremely averse to that shameful violation of it, which Caraffa had come to solicit.

The duke of Guife, on the other hand, and his brother the cardinal, were still as much bent on the Italian war as ever; and made no more scruple to exhort their master to undertake it, after he had sworn to observe the truce with the emperor, than they had done formerly, when he was at liberty, consistently with his honor, either to embrace or

reject it.

Between the opposite counsels which were given him, the unstable mind of Henry remained for several days in suspense. Elated with the success which had hitherto attended his arms, and inflamed with the ambition of acquiring the Neapolitan kingdom, he was inclined to a renewal of the war, and withheld his consent from it, only out of respect for his oath, and his deference to the opinion of the constable. At length Carassa having gained over the queen, through the influence of Strozzi; and the Guises having employed the still more powerful intercession of the dutchess of Valentinois, Henry began to yield to the importunity of such powerful

The famous Diana of Poitiers, Henry's mistress.

of.

m

e-

er

at

lf

.,

is

e

0

d

n

r

n

eh

h

1-

S

1-

e

1

folicitors, and admitted Caraffa to a private audience, which he had requested, in the hopes of completing that victory over the constable's remonstrances, and the king's remaining fcruples, which his affociates had begun. On this occasion, having, with the usual ceremony, presented to the king, a confecrated fword, he remonstrated to him, at great length, on the breach of his engagements with the pontiff; and when he found that Henry was not offended with this freedom, he next addressed himfelf to his ambition, and represented, that a more favorable juncture than the prefent could not be defired for attempting to expel the Spaniards from That the reins of government were now abandoned by the emperor, and committed to his fon; who, besides his inexperience, was extremely unacceptable to the Italian states and princes, and was not yet firmly established on his throne. That his exchequer was drained by those expensive wars in which the emperor had been almost continually engaged; and his armies were neither fo numerous nor fo flourishing as at any former period fince the commencement of his father's reign. While, on the other hand, the French army would have easy access to Naples, through the territories of the pope; and would thence likewise be furnished, both with fresh troops, and with abundant supplies of ammunition and provisions.

Henry found it difficult any longer to withhold his confent. But there were two points on which he required still farther satisfaction, than either Carassa's arguments or promises had given him. He BOOK

Ca

det

Ph

the

no

pri

the

bei

no

me

the

nic

po

wh

w

the

cia

. of

of

Bu

qu

TI

em

OV

ed

Be

an

ed

he

BOOK 11.

could not entirely divest himself of the scruples which arose from his oath; and nothing offered by Caraffa had taken off the force of the constable's objection against entering into engagements with a pope in the extremity of old age, who, it was likely, would die before the end of the proposed alliance could be accomplished. Caraffa had foreseen both these difficulties, and was prepared to remove them. He produced from Paul a power to absolve Henry from the obligation of his oath; he engaged that fuch a number of cardinals, partifans of France, and enemies to Spain, should be nominated at the next promotion, as would fecure to Henry the absolute disposal of the papacy, in the event of the pontiff's death; and, for his further fecurity, he promifed, in all events, that Bologna, Ancona, Paliano, Civita-Vecchia, and even the caftle of St. Angelo. should be put into his possession.

The war was now refolved upon without further hesitation. Caraffa immediately dispatched a mesfenger to Rebiba, who, according to his instructions, was advancing by flow journeys towards Bruffels, to inform him of what had paffed, and to defire him to return to Rome. Henry received absolution in form from the obligation of that facred law of nature which enjoins the observance of an oath; and, at the same time, he received a dispensation from a law of nations, confidered as no less facred, by which it was held to be unchristian and barbarous to begin hostilities without a previous declaration of war ".

Thuanus , lib. xvii c. 7. Father Paul , lib. v. Pallavicini, lib. xiii. c. 10. p. 71.

h

fa

n

n

d

e

f-

c

n

a

9-

ct

e

's

,

1-

,

r

C-

i-

C

e

n

f

3

n

,

-

As he flattered himself that his transaction with BOOK Caraffa might be for some time concealed, he was determined, if possible, to attack the emperor and Philip, while, trusting to the truce, they were off their guard. And thus did this monarch, who was not less virtuous than most of his contemporary princes, deliberately resolve to add treachery to the perjury and falshood into which he had been betrayed; under a persuasion that his conduct was not only justifiable, but even honorable, and meritorious in the fight of God and man. Such is the fascinating power of false religion; and so pernicious to fociety that impious pretention to the power of annulling the facred obligations of morality, which was claimed by the Roman pontiffs, and which, through the ignorance of their votaries, they were permitted for many ages to enjoy.

Caraffa had endeavoured to conceal his negociation at the court of France, under the pretext of treating with the king about the establishment of peace, and the calling of a general council. But the emperor and Philip were too well acquainted with his character, to be so easily deceived. They had penetrated into the real intention of the embaffy, and had for some time kept a watchful eye over all the motions both of Henry and the pope.

The conduct of Paul was extremely ill-calculat- The violence ed to elude the penetration of the Spanish ministers. Besides excommunicating the family of Colonna, and depriving them of their territories, he had treated with much feverity and injustice all those whom he suspected of being attached to the Spanish inter-

11.

80

in

CC in

pe fu

vi th

he

ne he

T

Ph

jea

an rei

me

VIC and

in

po

he

ent

mit

the

fitu

of a

ent

has

But

est; and had received, in the most gracious manner, fome Neapolitan exiles, who had fled to Rome. II. Some of his letters having been intercepted, he had put to the torture Antonio de Tassis postmaster at Rome, though a Spanish subject; and, in violation of a privilege long enjoyed by the kings of Spain, had given his office to another. He had put under arrest De la Vega, Philip's ambassador at Rome; and, with no small degree of vanity, fet on foot a trial in the confiftory, against Philip himself, on pretence that, as his liege - lord, he had a right to deprive him of the kingdom of Naples, on account of his having failed in the payment of 700 ducats, which he alledged was an annual tribute due from the possessor of that kingdom to the Holy See ".

> While Paul gave these impotent proofs of his refentment, his nephews were making diligent preparation for the approaching war. They were employed affiduoufly in repairing the fortifications of Rome, Paliano, and other places. And, having levied a confiderable number of troops, they engaged Camillo Orfini, one of the ablest generals of the age, to command them.

The duke of Alva.

The administration of Philip's affairs in Italy was at this time in the hands of Ferdinand de Toledo duke of Alva; a fingular and distinguished personage in Philip's reign, whom there will be frequent occasion to mention in the sequel. He was arro-

Gianone, lib. xxxiii. c. r. The duke of Alva's letter in Summonte, tom. iv. p. 270. Clement VII. had renounced this claim.

er,

e.

ad

at

on

n,

er

e;

a

n

ht

n

00

te

y

is

e-

1-

of

g

1-

f

3

1-

t

11.

gant, vain, and proud; violent, inflexible, and BOOK relentless; but patient, prudent, and fagacious; inured from his youth to arms, and possessed of consummate skill in the art of war. He had been intrusted with the supreme command of the emperor's forces in Germany; and, though unfuccefsful in the fiege of Metz, had discovered uncommon vigor and abilities. He did not, however, enjoy the same degree of credit with the father, which he afterwards attained under the fon; whom he nearly resembled in his character, and whose favor he had courted with great affiduity and fuccess. Through the influence of Ruy Gomez de Silva, Philip's principal favorite, who beheld with a jealous eye Alva's growing favor with the king, and was defirous, on that account, to have him removed to a distance from the helm of government, he had, about a year before, been appointed viceroy of Naples, as well as governor of Milan. and commander in chief of all the Spanish forces in Italy.

Philip had been fully informed by Alva, of the pope's conduct with regard to him; and even before he knew of his alliance with Henry, he could not entertain any doubt of his intentions. Had he permitted Alva to act with vigor, and to improve the advantage over Paul, which his defenceless fituation afforded him, he might have got posselsion of all his fortified places, have deterred Henry from entering into any new connexion with him, and have thereby prevented the renewal of the war. But being convinced that Henry would never

fai

he

de

thi

to Ve

Ne

ne_j

du

ext

ed of

affr

me

irre

aga

bed

car

the

the

ver

wei

for

min

it by

litan

S

violate the truce of Vaucelles, by which he was BOOK fo great a gainer; and knowing that the pontiff H. could do nothing without the affistance of the French, he gave orders to Alva, to use every art of persuasion, before he should have recourse to arms. Alva, though naturally averse to all mild expedients, complied with his instructions; and, by letters and messengers, complained, remonstrated, and even soothed and flattered both Paul and his nephews. All his endeavours, however, were ineffectual. They still continued their preparations; and gave him fometimes haughty, and always unfatisfactory replies. At length the duke of Alva sent Pirro de Loffredo, with one letter to the college of cardinals, and another to Paul 13; in which, after enumerating the various injuries which his mafter had received, and renewing his former offers of peace and friendship, he concluded with protesting, that if his offers were again rejected, the pope should be chargeable with all the calamities that might follow. Before the arrival of Loffredo, Paul had received intelligence from France of the fuccess of the cardinal's negociation; and the duke of Alva's letter ferved only to precipitate him into new extravagances. He threw Loffredo into prison, and would even have put him to death, had not the college of cardinals interposed ". He then gave orders to Aldobrandin, the confistorial advocate, to finish the process which he had begun against Philip, on account of his

The original letters are preserved by Summonte, lib. x. and dated August 21, 1556.

Summonte, lib. x. p. 277. Gianone, lib. xxxiii. c. 1.

failure in paying tribute for Naples; and, after B hearing the cause pleaded, he passed sentence, depriving him of the sovereignty of that kingdom 1.

11.

This violent conduct of Paul gave great offence throughout Europe, and, in Italy, ferved rather to obstruct, than to promote his designs. The Venetians resused to accede to his alliance; and the Neapolitans, perceiving what the ambition of his nephews aimed at, with respect to them, entered warmly into all the prudent measures which the duke of Alva planned for their desence.

But Philip was not so much affected by Paul's Philip's extravagant behaviour, as might have been expected from a young, ambitious, powerful monarch, of a temper of mind impatient of injuries and affronts. Notwithstanding the contumelious treatment which he had received, he still continued irresolute, and discovered an amazing reluctance

against proceeding to extremities.

0

d

1-

1

d

C

r

15

d

-

e

f

n

O

t

1-

h

Some historians affirm, that he had early imbibed, from the Spanish ecclesiastics, who had the care of his education, the highest veneration for the Holy See; and entertained some scruples as to the lawfulness of employing force against the sovereign pontiff. Others affert, that these scruples were mere grimace and affectation. He had already formed the plan of subjecting Europe to his dominion; and zeal for the Catholic faith was both

Gianone adds, that he was diffuaded from publishing it by Camerario of Benevento, the great Civilian, a Neapolitan exile.

BOOK the pretext and the instrument which he had re-11. folved to employ for accomplishing his design.

Neither of these accounts ought to be entirely rejected; and neither of them ought to be admitted as fatisfactory. On the one hand, it is impossible to doubt that ambition, and not religion, was the ruling principle of Philip's conduct; and on the other, when we reflect on the pains which were taken, from his earliest infancy, to inspire him with an attachment to the popish faith, and confider how ferious and zealous he ever appeared in the profession and support of it; it will be imposfible to suppose, that in religious matters, he was entirely hypocritical. It is improbable that any perfon could act fo uniform a part as Philip did, without feeling, in a considerable degree, the power of that motive which he held forth to the world as the principle of his conduct. Nor does it afford the smallest presumption against this supposition, that his conduct was, on many occasions, inconsistent with religious fincerity. His religion was not furely pure and genuine. It was neither the religion of nature, nor that of Christ, but was the barbarous superstition of the church of Rome, which, in the age of Philip, instead of deterring men from vice, tended to encourage them in the practice of it, by inculcating upon them the highest reverence for an order of priests, supposed to be invested with the power of absolving from the guilt and punishment of the most enormous crimes. To Philip's Superstitious veneration for the Holy See. therefore, may be ascribed, in part, both his moderation in the present juncture, and a resolution which

he

V

fa

th

th

th

hi

of

tie

pe

2

to

fre

N:

in

hu

ari

to

it.

he formed, to confult the most distinguished divines, with regard to the lawfulness of waging war against an enemy whose person he deemed so facred and inviolable.

Those men knew well what counsel was fuited to his present circumstances; and they declared, that, although it behoved him to begin with fupplicating his Holiness, as the universal father of the church, yet,, if his entreaties were rejected, the law of nature would permit him to defend his territories, and to vindicate his right by force of arms ".

By this answer, Philip's religious scruples were Alva's mili. removed. Still, however, he lamented the necessity tary operahe lay under, of beginning his reign with hostilities, against a power, with which, more than with any other, he was defirous of cultivating peace and friendship. But at last, after having lost a great deal of time in negociating, he fent orders to the duke of Alva to take the field.

That general, having fome time before gone from the dutchy of Milan to the kingdom of Naples, and fixed his head-quarters near the confines of the Ecclefiastical State, began his march in the beginning of September one thousand five hundred and fifty - fix, with a well - disciplined army; which, though small in number, was superior to that which the pontiff had provided to oppose it. In a few weeks Alva reduced several towns in the Campagna di Roma; and took possession of them in the name of the facred college, and of the

Ferreras, vol. ix. p. 373.

VOL. I.

re-

ly

ed

ole

he

he

re

m

nin

ofas

er-

ut at

CIff

ict

us

c-

at he

of

m he

ed

he

es.

e.

ech BOOK 11.

a many eli

1556.

BOOK II. 1556.

future pope. The people of Rome were thrown into consternation by his approach; and many families left the city, in order to avoid the calamities of a fiege. Paul still retained all his wonted haughtiness, and poured out threats and anathemas

t

t

C

b

10

n

h

21

bi

ki

W

to

in

re

W

R

be

fo

W

fo

po

tro

against the enemy.

He grants a truce.

But the duke of Alva still continued to advance till his troops could make incursions almost to the gates of Rome. In this fituation cardinal Caraffa found his uncle's affairs upon his return from France. The army which he had obtained from Henry, had already reached Piedmont; but, being detained there by the rigor of the winter, could not arrive in time to fave Rome from falling into the hands of the Spaniards. In order to prevent this, Caraffa prevailed on Paul, who, from pride, and ignorance of his danger, was extremely reluctant to apply for a ceffation of arms; and Alva, at the request of his uncle, the cardinal of St. James, confented to a conference with Caraffa, in the ifle of Fiumicino. He could not be ignorant, that this crafty Italian's intention was only to amuse him till the French army should approach. But an interval of repose was no less expedient for himself, than for the enemy. His army was greatly diminished by putting garrifons into the conquered towns. His ships with provisions had been long detained by contrary winds; and his presence was necessary in Naples, to hasten his levies, and put the kingdom into a posture of defence before the arrival of the duke of Guise. Influenced by these considerations, Alva, readily confented to a truce of forty days; and, immediately

after concluding it, he fet out for Naples, where he BOOK exerted himself, with great affiduity, in completing

his preparations for the next campaign.

vn

ny

la-

ed

as

in the

ce

he

ffa

ce.

ad

ed

ve

ds

ffa

ce

or

his

a

10.

n's

ch

ofe

ıy.

TI-

-01

is;

en

of

fe.

ily

ly

The duke of Guise had now passed the Alps, with twelve thousand foot, and near two thousand horse, and had advanced as far as Rheggio. There he was met by the duke of Ferrara, who, having acceded to the alliance between the pope and Henry, had brought along with him near feven thousand men. Guise deliberated for some time whether he should begin his operations with laying fiege to Cremona, Milan, and other towns in the north of Italy; or, leaving these behind him in the hands of the enemy, should march directly towards Naples. He had been earnestly exhorted by marechal de Briffac, whom he saw in Piedmont, to embrace the former of these measures, as being the safest and most practicable; and in this opinion the duke of Ferrara concurred; but Guise had received positive orders from the king, to be directed in this matter by the pope, who infifted that he should advance without delay towards Naples. In compliance, therefore, with his instructions, he pursued his march southward till he reached the frontiers of that part of the kingdom which is called the Abruzzo. At his arrival in Rome, he was received in triumph, as if he had been already crowned with victory. But he foon found that he had been cruelly deceived by Caraffa, with regard to the affistance which that prelate had fo confidently promifed him in the name of the pontiff; who had not been able either to raife the troops which he had flipulated, or to furnish his

11.

1557.

so Cavigatia.

ingileo al tudi

we calle is

E 2

BOOK

11. 1557.

25971

He lays fiege to Civitella.

magazines with an adequate quantity of military flores. Guise was extremely mortified at his present disagreeable situation, and saw that he was likely to meet with nothing but diffrace and shame, where he had flattered himfelf with the hopes of adding to his former glory. He laid siege, however, to Civitella, and carried on his operations against it, for more than three weeks, with his wonted spirit and intrepidity. After having made a breach in the wall, he attempted to take the place by storm. But his troops were repulsed with great loss by the garrison, who were bravely feconded by the inhabitants. Even the women discovered, on this occasion, the most undaunted resolution, and feemed determined to lay down their lives, rather than submit to the dominion of the French; whose insolent use of victory, in former Italian expeditions, was not yet, after many years, obliterated from their minds.

The duke of Alva had resolved, with his usual cantion, to act on the defensive; and to fortify his camp on the fouth fide of the river Pescara, which lay between him and the enemy. But when he found that their enterprise against Civitella detained them fo long, he concluded that the accounts which he had received of their strength must have been exaggerated; and therefore he croffed the river. and advanced towards them.

But is obliged o raife it.

Guife was extremely unwilling to quit the fiege; but, having received certain intelligence that the enemy's army was superior to his own, he listened to the advice of marechal Strozzi, and retired into

bu ge ve th ou

> bo an fo qu

> > ter

in V H an ze rel

> CE of for thi

W

dil

up bu

th

ry

nt

ly

e,

of

W-

ns

nis

a

ce

th

le-

0-

0-

ir

ne

er

S,

al

is

h

d

m

e

n

the ecclefialtical territories. Alva followed him: BOOK but neither he nor Guile feem to have wished for a general engagement. The former could not have ventured on it with any probability of fuccefs; and the latter thought it abfurd to rifk a kingdom without necessity on the chance of a battle that air and

Whilft thefe things paffed in the Abruzzo, Mark Antony Colonna made rapid progress in the neighbourhood of Rome, where he reduced feveral forts and towns, and obtained a victory over the pope's forces, commanded by Julio Orfini and the marquis of Montebello, ad history same, I la loi este

By these disasters, Paul was overwhelmed with terror. And when he was lamenting in the confiftory, the calamities in which his dominions were involved, he expressed his dread, that ere long the Vatican itself would be in the hands of the enemy. He added, that he longed now to be with Christ; and as if he had engaged in the present war from zeal for the faith, and not from ambition and refentment, he concluded with faving athat he would wait for his crown of martyrdom without difmay. A hallower rest bad on mode work and

He was willing, however, to preferve his earthly crown as long as possible; and had fent to the duke of Guife, entreating him to haften towards Rome for his defence. This general was now on his march thither; full of vexation and chagrin on account of the inglorious part which he had acted. He called upon cardinal Caraffa to fulfil his promifes; and he

Haræus fays, that Guife labored to force Alva to engage; but this does not appear from the detail in Thuanus.

1557.

The war in

France.

E 2

th

th

ap

W

m

pr

go li

to

le th

pı

m

er

to

q a

m fi

W

te

employed all his interest to procure supplies from the court of France. But the pope's refources were already exhausted; and the French monarch had 15575 more than fufficient employment at home for all the troops which he had referved, after providing for his Italian expedition.

The war in France.

Philip had, for the reasons above mentioned, entered into the war with reluctance; but having, in the origin of it, received the highest provocation from Henry, as well as from the pope, and knowing that, in the beginning of his reign, the eyes of all Europe would be fixed upon his conduct, herhad refolved to exert his utmost vigor, and to attack Henry, in that quarter, where he could most successfully annoy him.

With extraordinary industry and dispatch, he affembled a numerous army in the neighbourhood of Charlemont, under the command of Philibert Emanuel duke of Savoy. And Emanuel cheerfully undertook the charge committed to him, as it gave him at once an opportunity of displaying his great abilities, and of taking vengeance on the French king, by whom he had been expelled from his dominions. Of the army which was collected, only a small part confisted of Spaniards; the greatest part were either Dutch, and Flemings, or Germans. In levying them, Philip was much indebted to the zeal and alacrity with which his subjects in the Netherlands espoused his cause. For the States, notwithflanding the prejudice to their commerce, which they forefaw must arise from the war, granted, with unusual liberality, all the supplies which he demanded.

m

re

ad

all

g

d,

g,

a-

be

he

n-

r,

he

he

bd

rt

ly

re.

at

h

115

ly

rt n

al

r-

b-

Y

n-

d.

But while in this they gave proof of their loyalty, BOOK they discovered, by another part of their conduct, their jealoufy and discontent. They reserved in their own hands the administration of the money which they voted him; and appointed commissioners to apply it to the payment of the troops. This action, which proceeded from their jealoufy of the Spaniards, made a deep impression on the dark resentful mind of Philip; it contributed to alienate his affections from his Flemish subjects; and gave him an inveterate prejudice against that free constitution of their government, by which they were thus enabled to limit his authority. But he was fenfible how improper it would have been, in the present conjuncture, to discover his refentment, or to dispute their privileges. He agreed to accept of their supplies, with the condition annexed to the grant of them; and proceeded to complete his preparations.

Not satisfied with the army which he had drawn Philip engatogether from Germany and the Netherlands, aug- in the war. mented by a reinforcement fent from Spain, he resolved, if possible, to persuade the English to enter into the war. With this view he went over to England. He found the privy counfellors, the queen herfelf, and the whole body of the people, averle to his defign. It has almost never happened, either before or fince that period, that war with the French was not agreeable to the English. During many centuries they had been accultomed to confider their French neighbours as enemies and rivals, with whom they often showed an eagerness to contend, when it was greatly their interest to remain at

III 19574

BOOK HIL 1657.1

ges Rugiand

peace. But their enmity towards the French yielded at this time to their jealoufy of the Spaniards; and they entertained the most irreconcileable aversion to the proposed alliance. Mary, as just now hinted, was not of herfelf inclined to the war, but notwithstanding this, and the cold indifference with which Philip had ever treated her, she was unable to refift his folicitation b'and and the true constant

21

th

to

ai

21

m

n

hi

W

in

Ti

m

W

to

CC

no

di

na

ki

55

tu

to

la

en

fo

qu

m

Her kinfman cardinal Pole, and her other counfellors, represented, that it was a chief article of her marriage-treaty, that the alliance with France should be preserved inviolate; that the violation of it would excite an univerfal alarm with regard to the observance of the other articles, and that the prefent state of her finances would render it impossible for her, if the should enter into the war, to acquit herself with honor. But Philip having said, that if he were not gratified in his request, he would leave England, and never return to it; Mary was deaf to every argument that could be employed to diffuade her from her purpole; and, without further helitation, she ordered war to be declared in the city of Rheims, with the usual ceremony, on pretences which were either entirely false, or extremely frivolous. As the knew it would be in vain to apply to her parliament for affiftance in carrying on a war fo disagreeable to the nation, she had recourse to the oppressive expedient of extorting loans from individuals and corporations. By this, cerchineichhouse as encinies and rivals.

Van Meteren, Thuanus, lib. xix. c. 7. Camden's send, when it was greatly their more to a sange bear

and other means of the same nature, she equipped BOOK a confiderable fleet, and raifed an army of eight thousand men; of which she gave the command to the earl of Pembroke.

ed

nd

on

d.

h-

ch

to

ner

ld

it

he

e.

le

iit

if

ld

as

b

ut

b

1, or

in

y-

d

g

S,

's

II. 1557.

When this reinforcement had joined the duke of Savoy, his cavalry amounted to twelve thousand, and his infantry to between forty and fifty thousand; an army much superior to any which Henry could muster to oppose it. This inconsiderate monarch had not expected that Philip would have been able to make so great an effort, and faw now the folly of his late engagements with the pope. He was not wanting, however, either in prudence or activity, in repairing his fault, and providing for the fecurity of his kingdom. He committed the chief command of the forces to the constable, whom, notwithstanding his averseness to the war, he chose to employ, as the ablest of all his generals, to conduct it; and a great number of the principal nobility and gentry flocked to the camp, eager to display that zeal and bravery, which the French nation have often exhibited in defence of their king and country, on the find but weeks a wedgen

The constable could not for some time conjec- The siege and ture on which fide the duke of Savoy intended to turn his arms. His first movements were calculated to beget a persuasion, that he designed to enter France by the way of Champaign; but no fooner had he drawn the French army to that quarter, than, changing his route, he marched into Picardy, and laid fiege to St. Quentin. 101 01

This town must quickly have furrendered to fo August.

BOOK

II.

ISST.

Admiral
Coligni.

·airceal)

great a force, had it not been defended by the celebrated Jasper de Coligni, admiral of France, who made, on this occasion, a conspicuous display of those extraordinary talents which rendered him afterwards one of the most illustrious personages of the age. Being governor of the province in which the place lay, he thought it his duty to exert himself to the utmost for its preservation; and he forced his way into it, through the midst of the furrounding army, with a body of troops, which he animated to expose themselves to every hazard of war in its defence. Immediately after his arrival, he expelled the Spaniards from the Suburbs, and fet fire to the houses. But he soon perceived, that, by reason of the neglected state of the fortifications, the garrison was fill too weak; and that, without a reinforcement, it would be impossible to hold out long against so numerous an enemy. Of this he gave immediate intelligence to the conftable his uncle, and at the same time informed him where it would be easiest to introduce the succour which he requested. The constable, anxious for his nephew's fafety, and fenfible how necessary it was for the preservation of the kingdom that the duke of Savoy should be detained before St. Quentin, appointed d'Andelot the admiral's brother, to the command of a felect body of two thousand foot, destined for the relief of the besieged. A person of the name of Valpergue, well acquainted with the face of the country, had been fent by the admiral, to ferve as a guide to this reinforcement. But whether he mistook his way, or the duke of Savoy hair bir efc his

ex fel Vie Wa w pla to he the ex ma en pre va ga to Bu led

> he faf

to

fup

had got intelligence of the design, is uncertain. D'Andelot sound the enemy prepared to receive him, and was so vigorously attacked, that he escaped with difficulty, after the greatest part of his troops had been cut to pieces.

10

2,

y

m of

h

rt

ie

h

d

ıl,

d

t,

a-

t,

H

a-

m

11

is as

te

15

t,

ρf

e

l,

ıt

y

B O O K II. 1557.

By this difaster the belieged were extremely dejected, and the admiral had much occasion to exert all the address and eloquence which he posfessed, to prevent them from abandoning themselves to despair. From a high tower in the town he could view the country round, and faw that the place was completely invested on every side but one, where there was a marsh or lake, too deep in some places to be passed on foot, and in others too shallow to admit of boats. Through this marsh, however, he hoped that his friends might introduce a reinforcement. Having concerted with the constable the time and manner of putting his defign in execution, he threw up the earth in a part of the marsh, and reduced the water into a canal large enough to receive some small boats which he had prepared. When this was done, the conftable advanced toward the lake with all his forces, and gave d'Andelot an opportunity of entering the town, with between four and five hundred men ". But, in making his approach, the constabe had led his army through some narrow defiles, which he must repass before he could put his troops in fafety. His misconduct, in thus exposing his army to so great a risk in fight of an enemy so much superior, was quickly perceived by the duke of

Laboureur additions, &c. p. 375.

th

tı

O

fo

fe

0

W

y

VI

ar

CI

in

gı

ac

ch

CC

St

th

W

hi

1557.

BOOK Savoy; and a council of war was immediately called to confider of the measures proper to be pursued. Many of the officers thought that the constable should be suffered to retire; but count Egmont, general of the horse, whom Philip afterwards used so ungratefully, maintained with warmth ", that it was practicable to attack him in his retreat with the highest probability of fuccess. The duke of Savoy approved of the plan of attack which the count proposed, and committed the execution of it to himself. No time was lost. Egmont advanced instantly at the head of the cavalry, while the duke hastened forward with the infantry to support him; and finding the enemy unprepared for their defence, he soon threw them into disorder. The constable exerted himself strenuously to retrieve his error; but count Egmont, seconded by the infantry, with the general at their bead, advanced with fuch impetuofity, that the constable found it impossible to recover his troops from the confusion into which they had been thrown. Perceiving that the fortune of the battle was irretrievable, and stung with the consciousness of the imprudence of which he had been guilty, he rushed into the midst of the enemy, and seemed determined not to furvive the reproach in which his rashness had involved him. He was dangerously wounded, and would have fallen in the field, as he defired; but, being personally known to some nown diverge as to once or allow a surry or of

Auctore, confusiore, & prope dicam, perfectore Egmondensi. L. Guicciardini, p. 150. lib. iii.

ly

oe

10

nt

T-

th

m

C-

of

d

A.

ne

ne'

y

m

e-

t,

ir

ne.

DS

n

le

ſs

ne:

d

is

ly

ne

1e

Oi re Flemish officers, he was by them rescued from the foldiers and taken prisoner. His army was entirely broken. Three thousand men were killed on the spot, and four thousand taken prisoners; defeated among whom, befides the constable and his two fons, there were many persons of distinction, and feveral of the first nobility in France. On the side of the victors only eighty men were killed; a certain proof that the attack had been conducted

with no less prudence than intrepidity. Philip, although a flave to the lust of power, yet unambitious of military glory, remained at Cambray till intelligence was brought him of the victory. He then entered the camp with great pomp, and when the duke of Savoy and count Egmont approached him, he received them in the most gracious manner, and expressed his gratitude for the important fervice they had performed, with a degree of fensibility and joy which he was feldom accustomed to discover . His conduct on this occafion was in another respect more agreeable to his character. In memory of the battle, he vowed to confecrate a palace, a church, and monastery, to St. Laurence, because it was on the anniversary of that faint that he had obtained the victory. He afterwards religiously fulfilled his vow by building the Escurial; for which he reserved immense sums, notwithstanding the difficulties in which, through his expensive wars, he was almost continually involved.

11. 1557-The French

"Cabrera, lib. iv. c. 7. I was alled from the name

"Cabrera, lib. iv. c. 7. I where it was breeded.

The ground plan is that of a Grislison the eseptement of the Marky som of the Saint Lautence

BOOK
II.
1557.
Surrender of
St. Quentin.

The battle of St. Quentin might have been attended with the most important consequences, if Philip had complied with the advice of some of his general officers, who exhorted him to lead his army without delay into the heart of France. But this measure was too bold to be relished by a prince like Philip, whose caution often bordered on timidity. He gave orders to proceed in the fiege of St. Quentin; faying, that it would be dangerous to leave for ftrong a place behind him in the hands of the enemy, and that every army that ventured to penetrate into a powerful kingdom, like that of France, ought first to secure their retreat. His officers were the more eafily reconciled to these orders, as they believed it impossible for the besieged to hold out above a few days longer. But they were disappointed in their expectations by the skill and intrepidity of the admiral; who, in order to fave his country and retard the progress of the Spanish arms, had resolved to bury himself in the ruins of the place. rather than agree to a furrender. He inspired the garrison with the same generous resolution; and though the fortifications were weak and ruinous, he withstood all the vigorous and skilful efforts of the duke of Savoy till the feventeenth day after the renewal of the fiege, when the town was affaulted in eleven different places at one time, and both the admiral and his brother, after a brave and obstinate defence, were taken prisoners on the breach. During the affault, Philip showed himself to his troops in complete armour; and this was the only time in his life in which he was ever

fee plu bu th

the he in the

a f tur un the fer

pr

fei

ch

a tro

E

in

138

Ph

feen in a military dress. He allowed his army to plunder the town, as a reward of their labors; but gave strict orders to preserve the churches and the relics of the tutelary faint.

at-

if

his

ny

his

ke

ty.

en-

fo

ıy,

to

ht

he

e-

ve

in

of

ry

ad

e,

he

bi

s,

of

er

as

٠,

re

10

If

ıs

25

II. 1557.

In the mean time Henry's ministers, who had been overwhelmed with consternation, employed to the best advantage the leifure which the admiral's heroic bravery afforded them. They levied forces in every quarter of the kingdom, gathered together the remains of the vanquished army, fent for the troops which ferved in Piedmont under the marechal de Briffac, and recalled the duke of Guise. In a few weeks the whole eastern frontier was in a polture of defence, and an army collected in Picardy under the duke of Nevers, able to make head against the enemy. Philip perceived then that he had fuffered the only opportunity to escape which he would probably ever have, of penetrating into France and feizing the capital unprepared. He was now under a necessity of being fatisfied with employing his troops in enterprises of less splendor and importance; and the only fruit of his victory at St. Quentin was, the taking of the inconfiderable towns of Catelet, Ham, and Noyon; after which, he difmissed a great part of his army, sent home his English forces, and retired himself to Brussels".

The recalling of the duke of Guise from Italy Peace conrendered it necessary for the pope, though exceed- cluded beingly reluctant, to apply for peace; to which Philip and the Pope.

Thuanus fays, that the English and Spaniards quarrelled after the battle, and that this was the reason why Philip fo hastily broke up his camp. Lib. xix. p. 660.

BOOK 11. 1557.

readily confented upon much more moderate terms than could have been expected, confidering that Paul was now entirely at his mercy, and that no enemy remained in Italy able to withstand his power. The fame motives, whether religious or political, that made him so averse to entering into this war with the pontiff, determined him to have it brought as foon as possible to a conclufion. Almost the only condition which he required was, that Paul should observe a strict neutrality between France and Spain. All the ecclefiastical towns which had been taken were restored; and orders fent to the duke of Alva to go to Rome, and supplicate the pope's forgiveness, both in his own name, and that of his mafter, for their crime of invading the facred possessions of the church. In these conditions, and in the manner in which they were fulfilled, Paul appeared as if his arms had been victorious; and Philip, as if he had been humbled and overcome. Such was the reverence which the latter either felt in reality for the Holy See, or thought it necessary to affect, in order to promote his ambitious defigns ...

from Italy.

The duke of In this manner did Philip put a period to the Guise returns war with the sovereign pontiff; but that with Henry still continued. This prince, conscious of his incapacity, and fensible that an exertion of the highest abilities was necessary in the present critical fituation of his affairs, devolved almost his whole authority to the duke of Guise, and

created

CTE

Li

na

ble

pr

un

the

his

ge

ag

dif

tha

lat

tha

nic

orc

my

the

leć

eye

Ph

ne

St.

Ne

an

WO

fuc

ed

mo

had it. f

op

Thuanus. Summonte, c. 10.

ms hat

no his

or

ing

to

lu-

red

ity

cal

nd ne.

his

me ch.

ch

ms en

ce

rly

to

he

th

of

of

nt

ne

nd

created him viceroy of France, under the name of BOOK Lieutenant General of the kingdom. The French nation knew how much the ambition of this nobleman had contributed to involve them in their present calamities; nor were they ignorant how unsuccessful his attempts in Italy had been against the fagacity and skill of Alva; yet so splendid were his accomplishments, and to so great a height in the general esteem had his spirited defence of Metz against the emperor exalted him, that his arrival diffused universal joy, and roused the nation from that despondency into which it had been cast by the late disaster at St. Quentin. He quickly showed that his countrymen were not mistaken in the opi- Siege of Canion which they entertained of his abilities. The lais. ordinary feafon for action was over, and the enemy had gone into winter-quarters, when he took the field, at the head of an army which he had collected with the utmost fecrecy and dispatch. The eyes of all Europe were directed towards him, and Philip attended to his motions with much anxiety; never doubting that he intended to fall either upon St. Quentin, or some of the frontier towns of the Netherlands. It soon appeared that he meditated an attack, by which the interest of Philip's allies would be more affected than his own, but in the fuccess of which France was more deeply interested than even in the recovery of St. Quentin. For more than two hundred years the town of Calais had remained in the hands of the English; and as it ferved for a key by which they could at all times open an entrance for their armies into France, it VOL. I.

11.

pi

W

de

E

in

th

qu

fre

H

ply

hi

ter

dit

the

day

and

thu

fro

Th

riot

plo

pari

41

of E

II. 1558.

had been ever deemed one of their most valuable possessions. The French monarchs were fully fenfible of the diffionor, as well as of the danger, which attended the fuffering a rival nation to poffels a place of fo much importance in their dominions. But in those days, when the art of attacking towns was little known, Calais was regarded as impregnable. Nor had any of the French kings, even in the height of prosperity, ever thought of laying fiege to it. They were ignorant of the means of taking it by ftorm, and they could not reduce it by blockade; while the English could eafily furnish it by sea with fresh troops, stores, and provisions. But a plan of attack, which had never occurred to any person, was discovered by the fruitful genius of the admiral de Coligni, and by him had been fuggefted to the duke of Guife.

In order to carry this plan into execution, and thereby to redeem the nation from what had ever been considered as reproachful and ignominious, Guise put his troops in motion long before the usual season for action had arrived. He judged wisely in making choice of the rigor of winter for beginning his enterprise; for, besides that the enemy had no army in the field at this time to disturb his operations, he knew that the queen of England and her ministers had, from a principle of ill-judged economy, been accustomed to dismiss a great part of the garrison in the end of autumn, and to trust, for the security of the place, to the marshy ground on the land side, by which, they believed, that, in winter, all access to it would be found impracticable.

ble

en-

er,

ofmi-

ckled

25,

of he

ot

ald

s,

ad

by

nd

ife.

nd

ver

us,

ual

in

ng

no

ra-

her

co-

of

for

OIL

in-

de.

But the briskness of the duke of Guise's approaches foon convinced the governor, lord Wentworth, how little reason there was for this imprudent confidence. Wentworth represented to the English ministry, the necessity of fending him an immediate reinforcement. He acquainted them. that he had not above one-fourth of the number requifite to defend the works; and that, with the prefent garrison, it was impossible to prevent the place from falling quickly into the hands of the enemy. Had Mary's ministers been ever so desirous of complying with his request, it would not have availed him. Guife was sensible that the success of his enterprife depended on his conducting it with expedition. He pushed forward all the operations of the fiege with extraordinary vigor, and although it is acknowledged that the governor and garrison acquitted themselves with honor, yet he reduced them to the necessity of capitulating on the eighth day after his arrival 13. He then laid fiege to Guisnes January 8th. and Ham, which he subdued with great facility; and thus, in less than four weeks be expelled the English from all those possessions on the continent which they had enjoyed fince the time of Edward the Third, and in the acquisition of which that victorious prince had, after the battle of Creey, employed a numerous army for near a twelve-month.

The remaining part of winter was fpent in pre- The reducparing for the next campaign: and, on the part of tion of

BOOK II. 1558.

obesies a shinday, addida, as man i beginned Thoanus, l. 20. Van Meteren, p. 18. Carte's Hift. of Englandron: he a contract of the to abandon selvent

II. 1558.

BOOK the French, preparations were carried on with the utmost diligence, not only in France but in Germany, where forces were levied to the amount of four thousand horse and fourteen thousand soot. These troops the duke of Guife received in Lorrain; and then he marched with his whole forces united, and invested Thionville, a city of great importance in the province of Luxemburgh. The garrison, which confifted of eighteen hundred men, made a vigorous defence; but as the vigilance of Guise rendered all attempts to introduce supplies impracticable, they were foon obliged to capitulate.

e

tl

0

tl

h

fc

a

1

F

in

er

T

at

ef

·W

(Ta

an

w

Ri

for

arı

-100

ne

CO

mo

of-

ftil

The battle of Gravelines.

While the duke of Guife was thus employed in Luxemburgh, the marechal de Thermes, an old experienced commander, who had been appointed governor of Calais, having collected an army of ten thousand foot and fifteen hundred horse, invaded Flanders, took and destroyed Dunkirk, together with some other places of smaller note, and penetrated as far as Newport, laying waste the country with fire and fword. Philip fent count Egmont, with an army fuperior in number, to oppose him. On the count's approach, de Thermes retited haftily towards Gravelines, intending to continue his march to Calais, along the shore, without risking a battle. But the impetuosity and ardor of count Egmont, who advanced towards him with great rapidity, put it out of his power to execute this defign. His men too were loaded with the spoil of the ravaged country, which, whilft it retarded their march, contributed not a little to accelerate the progress of the enemy. He had time however

he

na-

efe

ind

ind

in

ich

or-

red

le,

l in

ex-

ted

ten

ded

her

ene-

try

nt,

im.

haf-

his

ing

unt

reat

de-

l of

ded

rate

ver

to repals the river Aa; but finding it impossible any longer to avoid an engagement, he drew up his army advantageously on a plain, where the enemy could not attack him but in front, nor avail themselves of the superiority of their number. He placed his carriages with the baggage and plunder on the fouth, and had the fea upon the north, and the mouth of the Aa behind him. In this posture he waited for the enemy; and being fully prepared for their reception, he made confiderable havock among them with his artillery as they advanced. This served only to quicken the approach of the Flemings, and to bring on the fooner a close fight. in which almost every part of both armies was engaged troop with troop, and man with man. The French were rendered desperate by their situation in an enemy's country, where they could not escape without conquering; and the Flemings were animated, partly by revenge for the outrages that had been committed by the enemy, and partly by the defire of recovering the spoil which they had carried off. The battle was obstinate and bloody, and the iffue remained for fome time doubtful. It would probably have been fooner decided, if the Germans in count Egmont's army had shown an equal regard with the Flemings to the exhortations and example of their general, who not only acted the part of a prudent commander, but often mingled with the foremost combatants, and gave conspicuous proofs of the most heroic valor. The French however still maintained their ground, and seemed resolved

BOOK 11.

F 3

ha

be

fti

de

W

20

311

bo

pi G

ki

fo

an

m

th

tiv

fu

GA

ed

vii

to

cia

Die

pe

BOOK either on death or victory; when, fortunately for count Egmont, some English ships of war, which happened to be cruifing upon the coast, perceiving 1198. the smoke, and conjecturing the occasion of it, entered the river, and began to discharge their guns upon the French army. Although they did not approach near enough to do much execution, yet so unexpected an event, in the time of battle, could not fail to produce an alarm even in the most resolute, and it threw the cavalry into confufion. Count Egmont improved, with great dexterity, the advantage which was thus prefented to him; and pulling forward with all his force, he broke their ranks and difperfed them. The infantry intimidated, turned their backs and fled. Near two thousand veteran troops were flain on the field of battle. Many were drowned in the river; and some were killed by the peafants, in revenge for the devastation of their country. A fmall number only made their escape. The marechal de Thermes, who was grievously wounded, and several other persons of distinction, besides three thousand common soldiers, were taken prisoners. All the artillery and baggage fell into the hands of the victors; whose loss did not exceed four hundred men ...

Philip was now at liberty to employ all his forces united, against the duke of Guise. Having almost exhausted his sinances by the extraordinary effort which he made in the first campaign, and

Thuanus, lib. xx. Van Meteren, p. 16. Haraus, tom. ii. p. 698.

for

ch

ng

it,

eir

fid

n.

at-

he

fu-

ty,

nd

eir

at-

nd

le.

erc

ta-

de

ho

ns

ol-

nd

ofe

his

ng

ry

nd

18 .

having found it impossible to draw any considerable BOOK fupplies from England, it was late in the feafon before he could affemble an army of fufficient ftrength. But after the marechal de Thermes was defeated, and count Egmont's victorious troops were combined with those under the duke of Savoy, the armies of the two monarchs were nearly a match for one another, and confifted, each of them; of more than forty thousand men.

They came in fight of each other, upon the Amiety of borders of Picardy, where the duke of Sayoy Philip and pitched his camp near Dourlens, and the duke of Henry. Guife, in the neighbourhood of Pierrepont Both kings discovered that anxiety which it was natural for them to feel in their present critical situation, and though they placed entire confidence in their generals, they could not be at cafe while they remained at a distance from the scene of action, and therefore they repaired, each of them, to his respective camp. Many fkirmishes happened with various fuccels. But it foon appeared that neither of the two monarchs was inclined to nik a general engagement: The principal Arength of both armies confifted in their German forces, and it was apprehended that, if either of the two armies were defeated, the victors as well as the vanquilhed would be exposed to the injuries and infults of the foreign troops Besides this confideration which both par They wish vies were alike affected, there were other motives for peace. peculiar to each. Henry had, from his late misfor-

11, 1558.

^{. &}quot; Care fara, harecoved no lefs than time millions of Meteren. La & Guicciardini polib. till aids gaireb blog

di

0

Ta

M

30

fr

fo

th

at

Ina

th

25

ca

th

pa

to

W

in

me

M

the

his

to

in

pe

BOOK 11. 1558.

They white

tunes, learned a degree of caution, which pature had not bestowed on him. He trembled at the thoughts of another battle, in which he must encounter the fame generals by whom his troops had been already twice conquered; and confidered that, after his defeat at St. Quentin, it had been owing to the remiffnels or mifconduct of the enemy, more than to his own ftrength, that his capital had not been taken, and his kingdom overron. Philip on the other hand, was, in all military affairs, cautious to excess; and chose rather to accomplish his defigns by political negociation, in which he judged for himself, than by the operations of war, in which he depended on the abilities of others. Far from being elated with the fuccess which had hitherto accompanied his arms, he was how as defirous of peace, as he had been before averse to entering into the war. This is not to be afcribed either to his moderation, or his freedom from the ambition of extending his power and territories. No prince ever gave more convincing proofs of his being actuated by that ambition; but having, as was just now hinted, found, that his most vigorous exertions had been necessary to assemble the forces which he had brought into the field; he dreaded, that; in cafe his present army were defeated, the difficulty of raising another would be insurmountable ". His arms, indeed, had hitherto been crowned with victory; but none of his generals had entered the peculiar to each. Heavy had, from his late misfor-

> Carte fays, he received no less than three millions of gold during this war, from Peru p. 343. no roto!

re

he

n-

ad

reb to

re

OE

TIC

us e-

ed

ch

m

to

of

ge to

ne

ce

IC-

ıft

ns

he

in

ty

lis

th

he

pq

oF

lists on equal terms with the duke of Guise; and he was justly apprehensive with regard to the issue of a battle in which he must contend with a general fo highly celebrated for his military genius, and whose enterprises had been so often accompanied with chocefs, and call to be about their selections with

These considerations derived additional force from Philip's extreme impatience to return to Spain; for which in preference to his other dominions, he discovered, through his whole reign, a warm and partial affection. And his delite of going thither was increased by accounts which he received at this time, that the opinions of the Protestants had made their way into that kingdom. He dreaded the propagation of these opinions, and resolved, as foon as possible, to embrace this opportunity in his native country, of teltifying his zeal for the catholic faith, by showing, that he would treat those who opposed it, without mercy, in whatever part of his dominions they should be founded a

Such were the motives which made the contend- Negociations ing monarchs fo defirous to put a period to the war. A negociation had been begun for this purpose in the month of August, by the constable Montmorency, and William the first prince of Orange. Montmorency, who beheld with much anxiety the exaltation of the family of Guile, had borne his captivity with great impatience; and in order to obtain his liberty, had exerted himself Rrenuously in removing every obstacle to the establishment of peace. He was permitted to go to Paris on his pa-

BOOK 11. 3558.

for peace.

B O O K

role, to treat in person with the king. A marriage was concluded about that time between his son and a grand-daughter of the dutchess of Valentinois. And by this event, joined to the king's habitual attachment to him, he recovered all his wonted influence; and easily persuaded Henry to consent to such terms of accommodation as it was not likely that Philip would reject.

1

f

Z

11

b

ti

ti

CI

E

th

qı

at

tic

W

H

de

50

Ca

2 1

ne

an

Plenipotentiaries were foon afterwards named by both princes, and a congress, for discussing their respective claims, appointed to be held at the abbey of Cercamps, not far from the place where the armies were encamped. The duke of Alva. the prince of Orange, Ruy Gomez de Sylva, Granvelle bishop of Arras, and Viglius, president of the council of state at Brussels, were nominated by Philip; and by Henry, the constable himself was named the cardinal of Lorrain, the marechal of St. André, Morvilliers bilhop of Orange, and Aubelpine the fedretary of state. The dutchess of Lorrain, whom it highly imported, on account of the vicinity of her dominions, that the two kings should put an end to the war, acted with great affiduity the part of mediator between them.

The conferences, which were opened in October, were foon afterwards interrupted by the death of Mary queen of England, who ended her short inglorious reign on the seventeenth of November following. But Elizabeth renewed the powers of the English commissioners, and the congress was resumed in the beginning of the year one thou-

Vegeclations for peace.

ge

nd

is.

al

ed

nt

ot

by

eir

he

ere

a,

ani-

he

by

ras

of

nd of

of

gs

eat

41

to-

ath

OEL

per

ot

Vas

ou-

1559.

fand five hundred and fifty nine, at Chateau BOOK Cambrefis 27.

In removing fo many grounds of difference as sublisted between Philip and Henry, the plenipotentiaries encountered many difficulties; but the zeal and activity of the constable, added to the unlimited influence which he had acquired over his malter, furmounted every obliacle, and foon brought the treaty, fo far as Philip, Henry, and the duke of Savoy were concerned, to the defired conclusion. Nothing retarded the figning of it, but the determined obstinacy of the French commissioners in refusing to restore Calais to the queen of England; who, on the other hand, declared, that the would not agree to the peace unless that conquest were restored. Philip thought himself bound in honor to support the claim of Blizabeth; since it was entirely on his account that the English nation had engaged in the war, and incurred the loss of the place in question. In a political view, likewife, he was defirous that Calais should be restored. He confidered, that, in some future period, he might derive advantage, as his father had sometimes done. from that facility which the polletion of Calais gave the English of invading France

But the zeal which Philip discovered on this occasion in behalf of Elizabeth, arose principally from a very different motive. By Mary's death, his connexion with England had lately been dissolved, and he had formed the scheme of renewing it, by

deprive her of her crown.

Forbes's Full View , p. s. a slad out , stall W

BOOK H. 1559.

marrying Elizabeth. The duke of Feria, his ambassador at London, was ordered to propose the marriage, and at the same time to acquaint the queen that his mafter would procure a dispensation for it from the pope.

te

C

aı

th

CE

di

d

 \mathbf{E}

th

re

P

p

in

to

ec

tr

th

ſe

au

th

CO

pa

Elizabeth had many motives to deter her from liftening to this propofal. Philip's imperious temper would alone have been a sufficient reason for rejecting it. Belides this, the knew well what apprehensions her fifter's marriage had occasioned among the English, with regard to their liberty and independence; and that her own popularity was greatly owing to the universal joy which their deliverance from these apprehensions had excited. She confidered that her marriage with Philip would be liable to the fame objection as that of her father with Catharine of Arragon; and that her accepting of the pope's dispensation would be in effect to acknowledge that her mother's marriage was unlawful, and the herfelf illegitimate. By doing this she might secure to herself the protection of the Spanish monarchy, and thereby hold a precarious and dependent authority during Philip's life; but she would forfeit for ever the favor of her protestant subjects, who alone were sincerely attached to her person and government; while she would throw herfelf on the mercy of the catholics. who confidered her as an usurper; and would, on the first favorable opportunity of afferting the title of the queen of Scotland, think it their duty to deprive her of her crown.

While, for these reasons, Elizabeth was unal-

m-

the

the

ion

100

om

per

re-

re-

ng

in-

vas

eir

ed.

lip

of

hat

be

ge

By

on a p's

of

ly

he

CS.

on

tle

to

al-

terably determined not to accept of Philip for a husband, she thought it prudent for some time to conceal her intention; and the returned fuch an ambiguous, but obliging answer to his ambassador, that Philip flattered himself with the hopes of success, and actually took some steps to procure a dispensation. As long as there remained any soundation for these hopes, he appeared extremely zealous for the restitution of Calais, But when Elizabeth, finding herself firmly established on the throne, ventured to introduce certain alterations in religion, which discovered her resolution to abolish popery in her dominions, Philip considered this part of her conduct as a sufficient indication of her intentions with regard to him. That zeal, with which he had at first espoused her interest, began to abate; and the English plenipotentiaries dreaded that, without respect to the claim of their mistrefs, he would not delay much longer to put the finishing hand to his treaty with the king of France 1.

beth, of continuing the war till she should recover what she had lost, upon condition that she too would engage to carry it on for a certain term of years; it would then seem, that he gave little reason for accusing him as some authors have done, of having acted ungenerously towards his English allies. But as this circumstance is omitted by the principal historians, and contradicts what is said of his coldness with regard to the interest of Elizabeth, I have not ventured to advance it as an undoubted fact. Burner, part. ii. p. 383.

B O O K

1559.

BOOK II. 1559.

Elizabeth at length perceived that it was in vain to hope for recovering Calais by treaty; and, as the fituation of her affairs at home rendered it highly inexpedient to employ force, she wisely refolved to give it up on the following conditions: that Henry should restore it before the end of eight years, or pay 500,000 crowns; that foreign merchants, not subjects of France, should give security for the money; that hostages should be delivered, till that fecurity were procured; and that, whether the money were paid or not, Elizabeth's claim should remain valid, unless, within the time specified, the should commit hostilities against the subjects of the French king.

to

th

th

ar

W

ab

a

M

CO

de

ele

ga

m

fo.

ce:

tai

be

int

the

m

tio

an

100

ful

act

art

In

eluded.

Towards his other allies, Philip's conduct was perfectly conformable to the dictates of the strictest honor. He procured the restitution of Montferrat to the duke of Mantua; of Bouillon to the bishop of Liege; of the ifle of Corfica to the Genoele; and of all the towns which the French had feized in Savoy, Piedmont, and Breffe, to the duke of Savoy. This peace was advantageous to himfelf as well as to the princes in alliance with him. He recovered Thionville, Marienburgh, Montmedi, and all the other places which had been taken by the French generals during the war, and acquired the fovereignty of the county of Charolois 19.

In return for the many concessions made by Henry, that monarch received no other compensation but St. Quentin, and the two unimportant

Meteren, p. 24. Guicciardini, lib. iii.

towns of Ham and Catelet. While his people, therefore, rejoiced at the conclusion of the war, which, had fome times excited in their minds the most dreadful apprehensions, they complained bitterly of the inequality of the terms of peace. and were highly exasperated against the constable; who, in order to accomplish his private views, had abused the too easy temper of his master, and made a facrifice of the interests and the honor of France. Montmorency durft not have counselled Henry to confent to fuch disadvantageous terms, had he not devised the expedient of giving Elizabeth, Henry's, eldest daughter, in marriage to Philip, and Margaret, his fifter, to the duke of Savoy. These marriages ferved, in fome measure, as an excuse for the ample concessions made to these two princes; fince honorable fettlements were thereby obtained for the daughter and fifter of the king.

Amidst that attention which Philip and Henry bestowed in this treaty, on their political and civil interests, religion was not forgotten. They bound themselves mutually to maintain the catholic faith in their dominions; and to procure " the convocation of a general council, for suppressing herely, and restoring tranquillity to the church,

It is not to be doubted that Henry would have Death of fulfilled this article of the treaty with the same ex- Henry. actness which he observed in executing the other articles; but a fudden period was put to his life, in a few months after the peace was figned, by an

BOOK 11. 2559

in

ł,

ic

re-

5: ht

er-

ty d,

er m

CIb-

as

eft at

OP

be in

a-

as le

li,

y

ed

y

ant

ecold and do Prices and place P. Paul, lib. v. wan and to allorence and at not

u

fe

ar

bl

bo

W

th

TIS

W

bi

ag

na

the

mo

ex

the

of.

the

del

pri

pro

bel

the

the

pre

to

na

mo

de 1

BOOK II.

1559.

accident which happened in the time of the rejoicings celebrated on account of his fifter's marriage. Having entered the lifts at a tournament with the count of Montgomery, captain of his guards, the count's lance broke on Henry's corflet, and a splinter of it having pierced his right eye, inflicted a wound, of which he died in a few days, at the age of forty. Far de la regner while bottom betomic

This melancholy event made no alteration with respect to the treaty of peace. The duke of Alva had some time before espoused Elizabeth, in his master's name; and Margaret's marriage with Emanuel was celebrated privately in a chapel of the palace.

State of France.

The courtiers and the people of France were affected variously by Henry's death. The constable loft thereby all the fruits of his late intrigues, and was foon afterwards obliged to retire from court, and to refign that power which he had shown himself fo solicitous to attain, into the hands of his enemies. Is a los rieds no vanor sille di bowleffed

Francis II.

The young king, Francis the Second, a prince equally weak in body and in mind, was entirely governed by his wife, the celebrated Mary queen of Scots; who was blindly devoted to her uncles, the cardinal of Lorrain and the duke of Guise. These two men engroffed almost the whole administration of the kingdom; admitting only the queen mother to a share of it, from their knowledge of her ambitious, intriguing spirit, and the dread which they entertained of her influence, as a mother, over the feeble mind of Francis. They showed no moderation in the exercise of the power which they had usurped;

1559.

usurped; but seized on every advantage for them- BOOK felves, and laid hold of every opportunity to humble and mortify their adversaries. The princes of the blood, with Lewis prince of Condé at their head, bore with extreme impatience the infignificance to which they were reduced; and resolved to embrace the first occasion that should offer, to vindicate their right to that share in the management of affairs, to which they thought themselves entitled by their birth, and the ancient practice of the realm ".

While the great men in France were thus animated against each other by considerations of a political nature, the people were violently agitated, and their minds inflamed by religious controversies. Under the reign of Henry, the Calvinists had suffered the most cruel persecution; yet they had multiplied exceedingly during that period in every quarter of the kingdom. The duke of Guise and the cardinal of Lorrain kept alive the flames of perfecution against them, and on all occasions appeared intent on their destruction. This alone would have determined the prince of Condé and his adherents to espouse the protestant cause; for even although we should not believe that the chiefs in either party were fincere in their religious profession, yet it cannot be supposed they would have failed to embrace fo specious a pretext as the differences in religion afforded them to palliate their conduct. The prince of Condé would instantly have had recourse to arms, if the admiral, more prudent and fagacious, had not prevailed on

VOL. I.

oi-

ge.

the

the

in-

da

the

ith

lva

af-

uel

ce.

ere

fta-

es,

om

wn

his

nce

ely

een

es,

ele

ion

her

bi-

iey

the

era-

rad

;

Davila, Caftelnau ab initio, & Additions aux Mémoires de Castelnau.

a

P

in

th

of

al

fti

th

Fr

in

hi

ma do

the

We

Eu

the

elta

COU

and

the

Dei

anc

pro

extr

betv

impo

11. juncture; but it was impossible that passions so violent as those by which both parties were impelled, could be kept long under restraint; and to every person capable of reslecting on what he saw passing before him, it was apparent that the nation was upon the

eve of a civil war.

France has in no period produced a more remarkable affemblage of great men than in the prefent and the fucceeding reigns; and had there been a prince upon the throne possessed of abilities sufficient to control their inordinate ambition, the French nation might have much sooner reached that degree of greatness and prosperity, which it attained towards the conclusion of the following century: but this mighty kingdom, possessed of every advantage which nature bestows, became a scene of devastation and misery for almost forty years, through the misapplication of those very talents, which, if they had been properly employed, would have rendered it prosperous and happy.

Nothing could be more desirable to Philip than this confusion, and the debility consequent upon it, in that nation, from which alone he had reason to expect opposition to his designs. It left him at liberty to pursue whatever measures he should think proper for the confirmation and increase of his power in Spain, Italy and the Netherlands; and it gave no small reason to the other European powers to apprehend, that France itself would fall under the Spanish yoke.

State of Italy.

In Italy, the state of affairs was no less favorable to Philip's views, than in France. He was now the sole ble

lent

uld

ron

fore

the

ark-

and

ince

t to

ion

of

ards

this

nich

and

pli-

een

rof-

this

that

pect

r to

for

ain,

fon

hat

e to

fole

and undisputed sovereign of the dutchy of Milan, and the kingdom of Naples and Sicily. His inveterate enemy, Paul the sourth, was lately dead; and Pius the fourth, who was no less devoted to his interest than Paul had been adverse, was raised to the papal throne. The republic of Genoa, the dukes of Savoy, Mantua, Tuscany, and Parma, were his allies, whom he had bound to his interest by the strongest ties; the three first, by procuring for them the restitution of their dominions from the French king; the sourth, by granting him the investiture of Siena; and the last, by ceding to him the city of Placentia and its territory.

After the conclusion of the peace, nothing remained to render Philip uneasy, either in his own dominions or in the neighbouring kingdoms, but the progress which the reformers had made, and were still making, in almost every country in Europe From Germany and Switzerland, where the reformation took its rife, it had spread with the most assonishing rapidity. It had become the established religion, not only in several of the considerable provinces and free cities in Germany and the Cantons in Switzerland, but likewife in the kingdoms of England, Scotland, Sweden, and Denmark; and in some of those states where the ancient religion still maintained its ground, the protestants were grown so numerous as to be extremely formidable to their opponents.

From the constant intercourse which subsists between Germany and the Netherlands, it was impossible but the new opinions must have been B O O I

G 2

early propagated from the former to the latter; BOOK and accordingly, in the month of May 1521, the 11. 1559. emperor Charles had published an edict, in which all the penalties of high treason were denounced against those who should be found guilty of holding any of Luther's tenets; or of republishing, or vending any books written by him or his followers. In the execution of this edict, which Charles from time to time renewed, all the fury of perfecution was exercifed; and it is affirmed by feveral cotemporary historians, that during the reign of Charles fifty thousand of the inhabitants of the Low Countries were put to death on account of their religious principles. These principles however, far from being extirpated, were more and more diffused in the midst of those severities which were

Philip was not ignorant of the progress which they had made; and it gave him the greater uneasiness, because, being exceedingly desirous of setting out for Spain, he would be obliged to commit the business of extirpating herely from the Netherlands to others, whom he could not suppose possessed of the same fervent zeal against it, of which he himself was conscious. In order to prevent as much as possible the inconveniences which might arise from his absence, he had gone from his camp at Dourlens to Brussels, and had been employed during the winter season in settling the govern-

ment of the provinces.

fitti go tit ce:

10

an du for according by of

fuj the of

HISTORY

er; the

ich

ced old-

or w-

rles rfeeral

of

the of

ver,

ore ere

hey

ess.

out the

nds

of

im-

uch

rife

at

ved

rn-

vereigneel out to be a chaineant out in again OF THE REIGN OF

na 1906, ili see realine la plan estituaria vitaria Reseator bed within SN in the state of none entit PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

people reason and the section of the graph of the graph of the dominion of BOOK IIL the Arestrang makeur well where themself

w wheel bis cher or out made for avay at the 1 HE provinces, which, on account of their BOOK fituation, are called the Netherlands, were long governed, by their respective princes, under the titles of Dukes, Marquisses, or Counts. These prin- of the Netherces were for many years engaged in perpetual lands. wars with the neighbouring powers, or with one another; and, as they had frequent occasions, during these wars, to have recourse to the people for supplies, the cities, the nobles, and ecclesiastics, acquired, in return, feveral rights and privileges, by which the provinces partook more of the nature of republics, than of regal governments. The supreme authority was lodged in the affembly of the States, which had the power of meeting as often as the members thought expedient. And without the confent of that affembly, no war

W

fai

of

m

m

th

40 la

na it

en

TIT

int

br

fo

ad

FI

far

me

ex

aff

be

the

fiv

ex

me

Cia

W

by

ha

could be undertaken, no taxes could be imposed, BOOK no new laws enacted, no change made in the 111. 1559. current coin, and no foreigners admitted into any branch of the administration. The sovereignty descended according to the ordinary laws of hereditary fuccession; but no prince was allowed to enter upon the exercise of it, till he had solemnly fworn to observe and maintain the fundamental laws '

> In this fituation these provinces remained for feveral ages, till by the failure of the male line in fome of the reigning families, by intermarriages, and by conquests, they fell under the dominion of the house of Burgundy. After this event they still continued to enjoy their ancient privileges, and to be governed according to their old laws; with this difference only, that whereas all criminal and civil causes had been formerly determined, in the last refort, by the councils of the feveral provinces, it was established, that parties might appeal from these to the tribunal of Mechlin; which was instituted in order to unite the provinces more closely, and to give them more the appearance of one state.

Prosperity of

Under the administration of the Burgundian the Provinces, princes, and even long before their accession to the fovereignty, trade and manufactures flourished in the Netherlands more than in any other European flate. No city in those days, except Venice, posfelled such extensive commerce as Antwerp. It

often as the members thought, expected And

Grotius de Antiq. Repub. Batav. cap. 5.

was the staple, or great mart of all the northern BOOK nations. Bruges was little inferior. Arras was famous for tapestries, which still retain the name of that place. In the city of Ghent there were many thousand artificers employed in the woollen manufacture, long before the art was known to the English, from whom the wool was purchased

by the industrious Flemings.

fed,

the

any

nty

ere-

. to

nlv

ital

for

in

es.

of

llif

nd

ith

nd

he

ro-

ht

n;

-01

he

16

an

he

in

an

It

10

17

of-

For this prosperity the inhabitants of the Nether- Causes of it. lands were, in a great measure, indebted to the nature and fituation of their country; which, as it lies in the centre of Europe, commanding the entrance and navigation of feveral of the great rivers of Germany, and is almost every where interfected by these rivers, or, by canals and branches of the sea, is admirably fitted both for foreign and domestic or inland trade. This fingular advantage, however, could not have enabled the Flemings to leave the other European nations fo far behind them, if the form of their civil government had not been peculiarly favorable to their exertions. The greatest advantages which nature affords for improvement in the arts of life, may be rendered useless to the people who possess them, by an injudicious, or tyrannical and oppreffive exercise of the civil power. And universal experience proves, how vain it is to expect that men will apply themselves with vigor to commercial pursuits, where their persons are insecure, or where the fruits of their industry may be seized by the rapacious hand of a despotic prince. But happily for the inhabitants of the Low Countries,

111. 1559.

in

ar

of

th

af

re bi

to

m

fh

tin

th

of

gr

th

en of

TO

hi

en

re

BOOK 111, the fovereigns of the feveral provinces (unable, perhaps, from the small extent of their dominions, to execute any plan of tyranny against the people) were, at a very early period, induced to give their consent and fanction to the above-mentioned system of fundamental laws; by which, although their prerogative was abridged, yet their power and resources were greatly augmented, through that prosperity which their moderate government had enabled their subjects to attain.

The fovereignty of these flourishing provinces passed from the samily of Burgundy into that of Austria, by the marriage of Mary, daughter of Charles the Bold, and sole heiress of his dominions, with Maximilian, son of Frederic the Third, emperor of Germany. This marriage was set on soot and concluded by the Flemings themselves, who, agreeably to their free maxims of government, assumed the direction of the conduct of their princess in this matter, which so nearly concerned

their prosperity and safety.

Lewis the eleventh of France had demanded her for his fon the dauphin; whilft he most impolitically gave offence to the States, by seizing upon Burgundy and Picardy as siefs of the kingdom of France. This imprudent step, and the death of the bishop of Liege, uncle of Mary, and a partisan of Lewis, determined the Flemings in their choice. They judged wisely, that their liberty would be safer in the hands of Maximilian whose hereditary dominions were small, and lay at a distance from them, than in those of a neighbouring prince so powerful as Lewis, who,

in all his conduct, had discovered so much injustice BOOK and rapacity.

le,

ns,

ole)

ve

ed

gh

ver

gh

ent

ces

of

of

ns.

m-

oot no.

nt.

in-

ed

her

lly

dy

his

ge,

ed

ly,

of

all.

of

10.

III. 1559.

The Flemings showed the same laudable jealousy of their privileges after Maximilian's marriage with their princess, which had influenced them in their choice of him for her husband. About four years after her marriage, Mary died of a bruise which she received by a fall from horseback, when she was big with child. Maximilian, under the name of tutor to his fon Philip, affumed the reins of government. The Flemings confidered his conduct as an encroachment on their rights, and refused to acknowledge his authority, till the States had ordained that he should be admitted as governor, only for a limited time, and upon conditions which they required he should take an oath to fulfil.

He did not observe these conditions so exactly as they expected. They complained of his conferring offices upon Burgundians and Germans. They were grievously offended with him for introducing foreign troops into the provinces, and apprehended that he had formed a design against their liberty. After he was elected king of the Romans, their fuspicions role to so great a height, that, upon his entering the city of Bruges with a numerous train of attendants, the inhabitants ran to arms, furrounded him in the marketplace, feized his person, and confined him in the castle, where they kept him prisoner for several months. The pope and emperor interpoled in his behalf, but could not obtain his liberty till he had given fecurity with regard to the feveral particulars on account of which they had taken offence.

m

OI

he

tr

th

an

fh

ki

th

in

at

the

ful

rel

ore

of

ha

the

Ph

to

go

ftre

. 1

QJ 3

BOOK 111. 1559. Charles V.

Of the fame jealous attention to their liberty the Flemings gave proofs during the administration of Maximilian's successors. Under that of his grandfon Charles V. they had real ground of uneasiness. Charles might have easily subdued them, if he had been inclined to use his power so ungenerously: and his arbitrary temper had sufficiently appeared in his government of Spain and Germany; in both which countries he had trampled on all those rights of the people, which had been long esteemed the most inviolable. On several occasions he had introduced foreign troops into the Low Countries; and it has been afferted, that he once deliberated whether he should employ them in establishing in the provinces the same fort of arbitrary government which subsisted in his Spanish and Italian dominions.

His popular-

But Charles was born in the Netherlands, and had passed there the pleasantest of his younger days. He loved the people, and was fond of their manners; which resembled his own, and were not so reserved and stately as those of the Spaniards. From taste and early attachment he kept them always about his person, and had bestowed on them the most important offices in his dominions. To his preceptor, Adrian of Utrecht, who, through his interest, was afterwards advanced to the papacy, he committed the government of Spain: and Charles de Lanoy, whom he appointed vice-roy of Naples, was intrusted with the management of his affairs in Italy for several years, with unli-

which they had taken offence.

rty

tra-

his

un-

m,

ge-

tly

ıy;

all

ng

ons

WC

ice

in bi-

ish

nd

er

eir

ot

ds.

m

on

ns.

gh

oa.

n:

ce-

nt

li-

57

mited authority. In all the wars which he carried BOOK on in Germany, and on the frontiers of France, he placed a particular confidence in his Flemish troops; used the people, when he resided among them, with the most courteous familiarity, and banished from his intercourse with them, that form and ceremony which renders it so difficult for princes either to know that they are beloved, or to show that they deserve it '.

The Flemings entertained a grateful fense of the kindness with which he treated them. If we except the infurrection of the people of Ghent, there happened almost no disturbance in the Netherlands during his reign. The States affisted him liberally in defraying the expense of those wars in which he was almost continually engaged, and discovered, at all times, a warm attachment to his person.

Charles would gladly have transmitted to his fon the affection which he bore towards his Flemish fubjects; and for this purpose he had, as above related, brought him to Flanders in his youth, in order to reconcile him to the manners and cultoms of the people. And afterwards, when he himfelf had resolved to retire from the world, and to leave the government of his dominions in the hands of Philip, he exhorted him, with much earnestness, to cultivate the affections of the Flemings, and to govern them according to those laws to which they had been so long accustomed, and were so frongly attached, but and to saturb only but liberands confidered as encuried to each nation,

III. 1559.

Bentivoglio per la sant to escuteda enounem bus

BOOK 111. Of Philip His haviour.

But Philip could not enter into his father's views. He had never made any confiderable stay in the Netherlands; and could not be fond of a unpopular be. people whose manners were so different from his own. In Spain, where he received his education, he had been taught the most superstitious reverence for the Holy See, and had imbibed the most extravagant ideas of the extent of regal authority. Charles was not, in reality, less fond of power; but in him ambition was, in some measure, tempered and corrected by his acquaintance with the world; whereas, in Philip, it was perverted and inflamed by the fentiments of an illiberal, cruel, gloomy superstition and and agent and analysis

The Flemings jealous of him.

The Flemings had long perceived and lamented the difference between the character of their late, and that of their present sovereign. Philip had taken the usual oath, by which he bound himself to maintain their privileges; and had made them the ftrongest professions of regard and affections But they judged of his disposition towards them from his conduct, rather than from his oath or his professions. They were not admitted, whilst he lived amongst them, to any share of his trust and confidence; and, in violation of their fundamental laws, he committed the administration of the most important branches of government to the bishop of Arras, a Burgundian; or to his Spanish ministers, Ruy Gomez de Sylva, prince of Eboli, and the dukes of Feria and Alva; whom the Flemings confidered as enemies to their nation, and strenuous abettors of that despotic power, to

CI W W

W

ha

10 la fo pa

bo W F fre

bo re

th

te

CI

fu G which, from the beginning of Philip's reign, they BOOK had suspected that he aspired.

er's

tay

of a

his

on.

ver-

foot

ity.

rer;

em-

the

and

iel,

11113

ited

ate,

had

felf

em on.

iem

or alle

rust

da-

of

the nish

oli.

the

on.

to

111. 1559.

It was not long before he gave them convincing proof how well - grounded their fears were against the with regard to his intentions, by the measures protestants. which he employed for extinguishing the new opinions in religion. These opinions had been of late diffused through every corner of the Netherlands; having been imported thither, partly by foreign merchants who came to reside there; and partly by the Swifs and German troops, whom both Charles and Philip had employed in their wars against France; but chiefly by the English, French, and German protestants, who had fled from the perfecutions which were carried on against them in their native countries.

Charles had, as mentioned in the preceding book, shown the same inclination to extirpate the reformed religion in the Netherlands, which he had discovered in Germany; and had, for this purpose, published several edicts against the protestants; many of whom had suffered the most cruel death 1.

Great numbers had begun to leave the provinces, and to transport their families and effects to the neighbouring states. Charles was moved with

It is almost incredible that the number of those who fuffered could amount to 50,000, yet this is affirmed by feveral historians. Meteren calls the number 50,000. Grotius, p. 12. calls it 100,000. F. Paul, lib. v. calls it 50,000.

fli

fre

W

14

ce

th

T

an

of

an

ar

ud

an

CO

civ

m

rel

fu

ful

of

th

tel

ne

-th

qu

a

th

111. from the regent his fifter, the queen dowager of Hungary. He felt for the calamities of the people, and he dreaded the consequences of depopulating a country where he had often received the most effectual assistance and support.

But these considerations had no degree of influence on Philip. He republished the edicts, and ordered the governors and magistrates to carry

them into rigorous execution.

In these edicts it was enacted, that all persons who held any erroneous opinion should be deprived of their offices, and degraded from their rank. It was ordained, that whoever should be convicted of having taught heretical doctrines, or of having been present at the religious meetings of heretics, should, if they were men, be put to death by the fword, and if women, be buried alive. Such were the punishments denounced even against those who repented of their errors and forfook them; while all who perfifted in them were condemned to the flames. And even those who afforded shelter to heretics in their houses. or who omitted to give information against them, were subjected to the same penalties as heretics themselves.

The inquisi-

Philip was not fatisfied with publishing and executing these cruel edicts. He likewise established a particular tribunal for the extirpation of heresy, which, although it was not called by the name Inquisition, had all the essentials of that iniquitous institution. Persons were committed to prison upon

BOOK

111.

1559.

bare suspicion; and put to the torture on the flightest evidence. The accused were not confronted with their accusers, or made acquainted with crimes for which they fuffered. The civil judges were not allowed to take any further concern in profecutions for herefy, than to execute the fentences which the inquifitors had pronounced. The possessions of the sufferers were conficated; and informers were encouraged, by an affurance of impunity in case they themselves were guilty,

and by the promife of rewards'.

ent.

r of

ple,

ing

nost

flu-

and

rry

ons

de-

eir

be

es,

195 ut

ed

en

nd

m

(e

s,

m, CS

...

nd

d

y .

e

15 n

It is not furprifing, that the establishment of this arbitrary tribunal should have occasioned disquietude in the Netherlands. It had created disturbance even in Spain and Italy, where the people could not boast so much as the Flemings of their civil rights; and had been strenuously opposed by many who were fincerely attached to the catholic religion. In the Flemings it excited the most frightful apprehensions. They considered it as utterly subversive of their liberty. They dreaded the ruin of their commerce; which could not subfift unless the foreign merchants, many of whom were protestants, could reside among them with safety. The new opinions had been propagated throughout all the provinces, and men knew not how far the inquifitors might extend their power, or how great a number might be found liable to punishments that were denounced, not only against heretics

Grotius Annales, lib. i.

BOOK

1559. New erection of bishoprics. themselves, but against all those who were suspected to befriend them.

To these causes of discontent Philip added another, by increasing the number of bishoprics from five to seventeen, the number of the provinces. This measure, which would not at any other time have given much offence, was in the present juncture universally disagreeable. Granvelle bishop of Arras was the chief adviser of it: nor did he and the king's other counsellors scruple to acknowledge, that their intention in promoting it, was to have at all times a sufficient number of persons in the Netherlands, upon whose zeal the king could rely for a vigorous execution of the edicts.

The new bishops were therefore considered as fo many new inquisitors. Their creation was regarded as an encroachment on the privileges of the provinces, and a violation, on the part of the king, of the oath which he had taken at his accession, to preferve the church in the condition in which he found it. The principal nobility were particularly averse to this innovation, because the number of the counsellors of state was thereby greatly augmented, and consequently the influence of the ancient members of the council was impaired, and the balance of power thrown into the hands of the clergy; who, they doubted not, would on all occasions show themselves ready to support the arbitrary measures of the sovereign. But no sect of men exclaimed fo loudly as the monks and abbots, whose opposition was inflamed by motives both of ambition and interest. For besides that

they

th

th

th

of

be

th

as

91

CO

th

ab

al

th

an

FI

ge

no

of

in

de

fer

T

ler

in

tu

th

e Ed

they would be obliged to yield the precedency to the bishops, and have much less weight than his therto in the affemblies of the States, it was out of their revenues that the new bishoprics were to be endowed. They were therefore highly incenfed. They labored to connect their private interest with that of the public; and represented the new erection as no less pernicious to the country in general, than it was to their order in particular .

cted

an-

rom

ces.

ime

unc-

o of

and

dge,

ave

the

ould

as

re-

the

ing,

to

arly

ber

atly

the

and

the

all

the

fect

and

ves

hat

y

Besides the grievances enumerated, the Flemings spanish complained bitterly, that in the midst of peace troops in the the provinces were filled with Spanish foldiers. They had ever esteemed it one of their most valuable privileges, that, according to their fundamental laws, no foreign troops could be brought into the Netherlands. Charles indeed had often introduced them in the course of his wars with France, and with the protestants in Germany. But the Flemings had been dazzled with the glory which generally attended that monarch's arms, and had not entertained the same jealousy of his intentions as of those of Philip; who, they could not help thinking, had formed a delign to reduce them under a despotic government; and had, with this view, deferred fo long the dismission of his Spanish troops. Their discontent was greatly increased by the infolent and rapacious behaviour of these troops; which in Zealand was fo intolerable, that the people actually refused to work at their dikes, faying, that they chose rather to be swallowed up by the ocean,

BOOK III. 1159.

when Philip had occasion for the medicularity, itselfants VOL. I.

BOOK than to remain a prey to the cruelty and avarice

1559.

Such was the state of affairs, and such the temper of the people, when Philip, intending to set out for Spain, was deliberating concerning a proper person to whom he might commit the government of the Netherlands. th

0

g

N

tu

W

hi

O

th

of

th

th

fai

bo

mi

an

fu

ho

th

in

ex

pe

ref

The dutchels of Parma appointed regent.

He hesitated for some time between Christina the dutchess of Lorrain, his cousin, and Margaret dutchess of Parma, a natural daughter of the late emperor. The former had diftinguished herself by her prudent conduct in the government of Lorrain after her hulband's death, and had lately acquired confiderable reputation by her negociations in the treaty of peace at Chateau-Cambresis. From the vicinity of Lorrain to the Low Countries, the Flemings were well acquainted with her character, and, as they had groaned under the burden of the French war, and had now begun to talte, with gratitude, the fruits of that peace which Christina's wisdom had contributed to procure for them, they were exceedingly defirous that the government of the provinces should be left in her hands. But Philip had good reason for the preference which he gave to the dutchess of Parma. The dukes of Lorrain were. from their lituation, in some measure dependent upon the crown of France; whereas the dutchy of Parma was furrounded with Philip's Italian domini-

These soldiers were not removed till the year following, when Philip had occasion for them elsewhere. Reidanus, p. 5. Meursii Auriacus, near the beginning

ons; and the duke and dutchess were willing to fend BOOK their fon, the celebrated Alexander Farnese prince of Parma, to the court of Spain; on the pretence of being educated there, but, in truth, as a pledge of that implicit obedience which the dutchess engaged to yield to the king's injunctions in her government of the provinces .

As Philip did not intend to return foon to the Netherlands, he thought proper, before his departure, to summon a convention of the States; which was accordingly held in Ghent. He was present himself, accompanied by the new regent, at the first opening of that affembly; but as he could not speak the language of the country, he employed the bishop of Arras to address the deputies in his name.

The bishop began his speech with informing The bishop them of the king's resolution of going to Spain, and of Arras's the reasons which rendered his journey thither neces the States. fary. He expatiated on the affection which Philip bore towards his Flemish subjects; to whom his family had been so much indebted for that ascendant and influence, which had given them possession of fuch extensive territories. His affairs in Spain, he. hoped, would not detain him long; but, in case they should, he promised to fend his son to reside in the Netherlands. In the mean time he earnestly exhorted the States to study to preserve the public peace; and to this end he thought that nothing could conduce so much, as the extirpation of herefy, which, whilft it fet men at variance with

III. 1559.

·m·

fet

per ent

at la

ina

ret

ate

by

ain

red

the

the

em-

nd. nch

de.

had

eed-

ices

ood

the

ere,

dent

y of

aini-

ving, nus,

Bentivogias

Bentivoglio.

BOOK 111. 1559. God, put arms into their hands against their civil fovereign. They ought therefore zealously to maintain the purity of their ancient saith, and, for this purpose, to execute with vigor the several edicts published for the suppression of heresy. In this, and every other measure, he hoped that they would concur cheerfully with the dutchess of Parma, whom he had appointed regent in his absence. He would leave the Netherlands, impressed with the deepest sense of that sidelity and affection which his subjects there had ever shown him; and would, as soon as possible, remove the foreign troops, and deliver the people from every other burden which the exigency of his affairs had made it necessary to impose.

and

ver

ren

it:

the

pla had

felf

cha

Ital

land

fou der

nor

dre

or a Phi

tion

reb

pro " b

a fi

mol

natu

fede

H

J

The answer of the States to this speech contained the warmest sentiments of affection and loyalty. But, before the convention was dissolved, Philip perceived that the deputies were far from being satisfied with every part of his administration. They had expected that the troops would have been immediately transported to Spain, and could not discover any reason for keeping them longer in the Low Countries but such as filled their minds with terror. Their suspicion that the Inquisition was about to be established in the Netherlands, excited the most disquieting apprehensions. There were some of the deputies who scrupled not openly to remonstrate, That the Low Countries had never been accustomed to an institution of so much rigor

Bentivoglio, p. 9.

and feverity: that the people trembled at the very name of the Inquisition, and would fly to the remotest corners of the earth rather than submit to it: that it was not by fire and fword, but by the gentlest and softest remedies, that the evil complained of must be cured: that as each individual had a habit or constitution of body peculiar to himfelf, so every nation had a peculiar temperament or character: that what might be fuitable to Spain or Italy, would be extremely unfit for the Netherlands; and that, in general, the nations in the fouthern parts of the world could live happily under a degree of restraint which would render the northern nations extremely miserable

These and such other representations were ad- Philip redreffed to the king himself by some of the deputies, who endeavoured to persuade him to annul, or at least to moderate the edicts. But on this head Philip was inexorable. And when one of his minifters represented, that, by persisting in the execution of these edicts, he might kindle the seeds of rebellion, and thereby lese the sovereignty of the provinces; he replied, " That he had much rather " be no king at all, than have heretics for his **fubjects**

His religion, which was of all superstitions the most intolerant; his temper of mind, which was naturally haughty and severe; his pride, which

111. 1559.

Count En.

vil

to

or

ral

In

ey

ar-

ce.

th

on

nd

gn

er

de

in-

y.

lip

fa-

ey

m-

lic-

he

th

ras

ed

re

to

rer or

Cuelderland, narch one of the most accomplised " Ch'egli voleva piu tosto restar senza regni, che possederli con eresia. Bentivoglio, p. 10.

BOOK 1559.

Philip re-

dates to gote

would have been wounded by yielding to what he had repeatedly declared he would never yield; his engagements with the pope, and an oath which he had taken to devote his reign to the defence of the popish faith and the extirpation of herefy; above all, his thirst for despotic power, with which he confidered the liberties claimed in religious matters by the protestants as utterly incompatible; all these causes united, rendered him deaf to the remonstrances which were made to him, and fixed him unalterably in his resolution to execute the edicts with the utmost rigor. He showed himself equally inflexible with regard to the new bishoprics; nor would he confent at this time to withdraw the Spanish soldiers. In order however to lessen the odium arising from his refusal, he offered the command of these troops to the prince of Orange and count Egmont, the two ablest and most popular noblemen in the Netherlands; the former of whom he had appointed governor of Holland, Zealand, and Utrecht; and the latter, of Artois and Flanders. Both of them declined accepting of the offer which was made to them, and had the courage to declare, that they confidered the continuance of the troops in the Low Countries, after peace had been established with France, as a violation of the fundamental laws of the constitution.

Count Eg. mont.

Count Femont, descended from the dukes of Guelderland, and one of the most accomplished noblemen in the Netherlands, having fately gained immortal honor by the victories of St. Quentin and

E H

rev titl. by

fen

Gr

Na wh fev hac wil ger late per ext wa or hac acc

afte his dut incl wit ferr fati

by

the

and wit fure

.07

Gravelines, had just ground to expect the highest rewards in the power of Philip to bestow.

he

his

he

the

ove

he

ters

refe

ron-

him

icts

ally

nor

the

the

om-

and

ular

om

nd .

lan-

ffer

e to

e of

had

the

of

hed

ned

and

The prince of Orange, fo well known in history by the name of William the first; was the reprefentative of the ancient and illustrious family of Nassau in Germany. From his ancestors, one of whom had been emperor of Germany, he inherited feveral rich possessions in the Netherlands; and he had fucceeded to the principality of Orange by the will of Réné de Nassau and Chalons, his cousingerman, in the year 1544. From that time the late emperor had kept him perpetually about his person, and had early discovered in him all those extraordinary talents which rendered him afterwards one of the most illustrious personages of this or of any other age. Both he and count Egmont had aspired to the regency; and their declining to accept of the command of the Spanish troops was; by some, ascribed to the chagrin occasioned by their disappointment ". The prince of Orange, after dropping his own pretentions, had expressed his defire to have the regency bestowed on the dutchess of Lorrain; and this discovery of William's inclination is faid to have been a principal motive with Philip, and his Spanish counsellors, for conferring it on the dutchess of Parma. Nor were they fatisfied with thwarting him in this. He had begun and made fome progress in a treaty of marriage with one of the princesses of Lorrain. In this meas fure likewise they opposed him, from an apprehen-

BIOOK

111.

1489.

William L

prince of

Orange.

poissoslia

from him.

er del inz di i anos runnadi lo in collectioni i

104 HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

BOOK 111, 1559, fion, it was pretended, that fo close a connexion with a family of so great influence, and whose territories lay so near the Netherlands, would give him an accession of power that might be dangerous in the hands of a person whose loyalty there was reason to suspect.

aff

ag

ha

em

ch

bly

fto

the

bro

ma du

tw

COL

to

the Bu

fon

fav

mai

but by

of i

mal

atta

trea

min

cion

ract

Caufes of Philip's alienation from him. It does not however appear, that, before the affembly of the States, Philip had any just ground for his suspicions of William's conduct; and there is only one circumstance recorded to which they can be ascribed. The prince having been sent to France as an hostage for the execution of some articles of the peace of Chateau. Cambress, had, during his residence there, discovered a scheme formed by the French and Spanish monarchs for the extirpation of the protestants. This scheme he had communicated to such of his friends in the Netherlands as had embraced the reformed religion, and from that time the king ceased to treat him with his wonted considence."

But we find a still more satisfactory account of Philip's alienation from the prince, in the jealousy of Granvelle and the Spanish ministers. From his early youth William had been considered as a principal savorite of the late emperor, who had on all occasions distinguished him with peculiar marks of his esteem. Charles used to communicate to him his most secret counsels, and had been heard to declare, that the prince, though scarcely arrived

Terreras, tom it. Godins, p. 4-9.

Bentivoglio, p. 6. Thuanus, tom. i. lib. xxii. sect. 10.

ion

ter-

nim

in

rea-

the

ere

to

ar-

me

for he

Ne-

on,

nim

of

ufy

his

s a

nad

liar

ate

ard

ved

10.

at the years of manhood, had often fuggested expedients to him that were of great advantage to his affairs. William was in the twenty-third year of his age when Charles refigned his dominions, yet he had already received feveral public proofs of the emperor's attachment. Not to mention his making choice of him to support him in that august assembly in which he refigned his dominions, or his bestowing on him, in preference to his other courtiers, the honor of carrying the imperial crown to his brother Ferdinand; he had appointed him commander in chief of his army, in the absence of the duke of Savoy, when the prince was only two-andtwenty years old. Against this measure all his counsellors had remonstrated, and had represented to him the superior character of the French generals, the duke de Nevers and the admiral de Coligni. But Charles adhered to his choice, and had no reafon afterwards to repent of it. William not only faved the troops while they were under his command from fultaining any misfortune or calamity, but fortified Charlemont and Philipville, and thereby secured the frontier of the Netherlands, in spite of the most vigorous efforts which the enemy could make to prevent him. This uncommon degree of attachment that was shown him by the father, was the real cause of the coldness with which he was treated by the fon. Granvelle and the Spanish ministers were envious of his rising greatness, and took every opportunity to inspire Philip with suspicions of his deligns, and an aversion to his character. Philip was confirmed in his suspicions by

BOOK

1559.

BOOK 111. 1559.

William's refusing to accept of the command of the troops; and faw that neither he, nor count Egmont, who likewife declined accepting it, were persons on whom he could depend for executing. the plan which he had formed for establishing def-

potism in the provinces.

He left them however in possession of the several governments to which they had been appointed, and still allowed them to hold their places as formerly in the council of state. He did not chuse to exasperate them too much. Their merit, he was fensible, entitled them to all the honors and offices which they enjoyed. He knew how extensive their influence was among the people; and he was conscious they had been guilty of nothing that could justify him for removing them from their employments; fince, even when their conduct had offended him the most, they had only exercised those rights, which, by the fundamental laws of the country, belonged to every inhabitant of the Nemellul en al brown

But although Philip did not think proper to difmiss them from his service, he resolved that they should not have power to frustrate his intentions. And for this purpose he left, for principal counsellor to the regent, the bishop of Arras; whose views were entirely coincident with his own, and in whom, therefore, the dutchess of Parma was defired to repose unlimited confidence.

The bishop of Arras.

Antony Perenot, bishop of Arras, so well known in the history of the Netherlands by the name of cardinal Granvelle, was fon to the cele-

en na ha em nic hig of gu and pe ed ces of not

br

vai and diff fen nox of poi vie

pri

for the

the

it c veri

I

of

g-

ere

ng .

ef-

(1772

ral

d.

or-

to

vas

ces

eir

on-

uld

oy-

nd-

ofe

the

Ne-

15,671

dif-

hey

ns.

llor

ews

in

de-

well

the

ele-

brated chancellor of that name, whom the late emperor had for many years intrusted with the mahagement of his most important affairs. Antony having been early initiated into business, had been employed by the emperor for feveral years in the nicest political negociations, and in some of the highest departments of the state. He was a person of extraordinary abilities, and particularly distinguished for his eloquence, his activity, his industry, and address. Yet he was extremely odious to the people whom he was left to govern, who confidered him as the principal author of all their grievances. In the court of Charles, and afterwards in that of Philip, he had acquired habits and principles not unsuitable perhaps to the minister of a despotic prince, but which rendered him exceedingly unfit for the government of the Low Countries, where the power of the fovereign was fo much limited by the laws. He was naturally choleric and haughty, vain, and oftentatious of his credit with the king; and, by an imperious and interested behaviour, had difgusted many of his friends, and inflamed the refentment of his enemies. He was particularly obnoxious to the principal nobility; and, in the courfe of his ministry, had been instrumental in disappointing many of them in their most favorite views of ambition and interest 14.

In the hands of a person so universally disliked, it could not reasonably be expected that the government would proceed smoothly. While Philip

BOOK 111. 1559.

Bentivoglio, & Strada, & Dom l'Evesque, tom. i.

BOOK 111. 1559. himself was present, the discontented nobles were overawed. But no sooner was that restraint removed which the king's presence imposed upon them, than their ill-humor broke out, with a degree of violence that drew after it the most serious and important consequences.

nothing it said all the first the communication of the communication of

guillion during playacies, his afterire, his in britey, and and has her he why earth many order us to the people whom he was brites several, who a confidered by open the edition part of engineers of each their preventions to the prevention of Philip, he had recipied his his said principles not unfaithful to had recipied his his earth principles not unfaithful to had recipied by the exceedingly unfaithful for the government of Management for unitary, where the government of the factories was formulaed insince by

the law ide was natically cholere and languary,

vaid, and oftentarious of his create with the known

and, by an amount of the formation of the bad

difficulted many of blk friends, and influent the to-

leading and a first comment of the way of the consented the

consequences pridely and ability; and, is the course

of his manifey, had been inflammental in diffic-

sinoul from real is then in their more concier

A Parson Far moindon to two

In the heads of a perfect of miveral the difficed,

it could not reafonably be expected that the go-

vernment would proved figochly. White Philip

" Bentivoglio, & Smale, & Desi Presigna, tom. f. -

P

of n arrive the soon in v above ber o work

which tin, he co

vere

ov-

em, e of

im-

iola

E to liég bas

COS

10.0

in Ni

iot

ML

English.

2030

10

56.7

12.

HISTORY South and

term is a visitation and supplied to the Cabiel

data his mediatricina, neignatricina, sid and

to overe when you con but shawered als the same or OF THE REIGN OF

to sitt motion tade to household labored by

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

to seem that he sength had addition years bear

BOOK IV.

PHILIP fet fail from the Netherlands with a fleet BOOK of near feventy ships, on the 20th of August, and arrived at Loredo, in the province of Biscay, on Philip's atthe 29th. He reached the port in fafety, but no rival in fooner had he landed than a dreadful storm arose, Spain. in which a part of his fleet was shipwrecked; above a thousand men perished, and a great number of capital paintings, statues, and other curious works of art, were loft, which Charles had been employed during forty years in collecting, in Germany, Italy, and Flanders.

Philip, animated by a spirit similar to that which prompted him, after the victory of St. Quentin, to confecrate a church to St. Laurence, thought he could not, on this occasion, express his gratitude IV.

elioned vid mort part to assume

no

pai ref

me

faal

wa

nol

du

of

uni ma

fer

the

duc

cro

enj

litt

to

fuc

ple

Cal circ

par

any

abo

of i

the

aga

the

for his preservation, in a manner more acceptable BOOK to the Deity, than by declaring his resolution to IV. 1559. dedicate his life to the defence of the catholic

faith, and the extirpation of herefy '.

The joy of the Spaniards on this occasion.

As the Spaniards had not for many years enjoyed the presence of their sovereign, his arrival diffused universal joy throughout the kingdom. His administration before his marriage with the queen of England had procured him the general esteem, and he was now more respected than ever, on account of the fignal fuccess with which his arms had been attended in his war with France, and the moderation and equity which he had displayed in the peace of Chateau - Cambresis.

Philip's attachment to Spain.

The proofs of affection which he received at this time from his Spanish subjects, were the stronger, because, although Philip seldom suffered either joy or forrow to appear in his looks, his discourse, or behaviour, it was well known how much he was attached to his native country, more than to any of his other dominions; and it was generally believed, that he intended to fix in it his perpetual residence. His manners were suited only to those of his Spanish subjects; he could not, as has been already mentioned, speak with facility any other language but theirs, and he possessed not that courage and enterprise by which the late emperor had been determined to undertake fo many voyages and journies to the different states which were subject to his dominion. The Low Countries had

Father Paul , lib. v. p. 417.

not, in the eyes of Philip, those charms by which Charles had been so powerfully attracted; and were particularly disagreeable to him, on account of the restrictions which their free constitution of govern-

ment imposed on his authority.

In the beginning of the reign of Charles, Spain was one of the freest states in Europe; but as the nobles were humbled, and their power abridged, during the arbitrary, but vigorous astministration of cardinal Ximenes; so the ill-concerted and unsuccessful attempt which the commons of Castile made some years afterwards, to affert their rights, ferved only to exalt the royal prerogative, which they intended to have circumscribed, and to reduce the Cortes to an entire dependence on the crown. And although in Arragon the people still enjoyed their ancient privileges, yet there was little probability that they would ever adventure to dispute the will of their prince; who possessed fuch inexhaustible resources, and could, when he pleased, employ even their own countrymen the Castilians, to subdue them. But there was no circumstance which served more to increase Philips partiality for Spain, and to make him prefer it to any of his other dominions for the place of his abode, than the full establishment which the court of inquisition had acquired in that kingdom, and the fecurity which this institution afforded him against the propagation of heresy.

This tribunal, which, although it was not of the inthe parent, has been the nurse and guardian

BOOK IV. 1559.

oyfufadof and tof ation e of this ger, Joy rfe. he 1 to ally tual hose peen ther that

eror

ages

vere

had

ble

to

olic

IV. 1559.

BOOK of ignorance and superstition, in every kingdom into which it has been admitted, was introduced into Spain near a century before the present period, by Ferdinand and Isabella; and was principally intended to prevent the relapse of the Jews and Moors, who had been converted, or pretended to be converted to the faith of the church of Rome. Its jurisdiction was not confined to the Jews and Moors, but extended to all those who, in their practice or opinions, differed from the established church. In the united kingdoms of Castile and Arragon, there were eighteen different inquifitorial courts; having each of them its counfellors, termed Apostolic Inquisitors; its secretaries, ferjeants, and other officers; and besides these, there were twenty thousand familiars dispersed throughout the kingdom, who acted as spies and informers, and were employed to apprehend all fuspected persons, and to commit them for their trial, to the prisons which belonged to the inquisition. By these familiars, persons were seized on bare fuspicion; and, in contradiction to the common rules of law, they were put to the torture, tried and condemned by the inquisitors, without being confronted either with their accusers, or with the witnesses on whose evidence they were condemned. The punishments inflicted were more or less dreadful, according to the caprice and humor of the judges. The unhappy victims were either strangled, or committed to the flames, or loaded with chains and thut up in dungeons during life. Their

Th flig

to it h foc fpe qui into of l

wh oth hav whi S

Spa

the exp deri and till, the

B the jealo Span of ig

ofte

of re which dom

aced

riod.

ally

and

ided

of

the

ho,

the

of

rent

oun-

ries,

efe,

rfed

and

all

heir

uifi-

on

om-

ure,

out

with

con-

e or

mor

ther

ded

life. ir

1559.

Their effects were confiscated, and their families BOOK stigmatized with infamy . IV.

This institution was, no doubt, well calculated to produce an uniformity of religious profession; but it had a tendency likewife to destroy the sweets of focial life; to banish all freedom of thought and speech; to disturb men's minds with the most disquieting apprehensions, and to produce the most intolerable flavery, by reducing persons of all ranks of life to a state of abject dependence upon priests; whose integrity, were it even greater than that of other men, as in every false religion it is less, must have been corrupted by the uncontrouled authority which they were allowed to exercise.

Such nearly were the fentiments which even the Spaniards entertained of this iniquitous tribunal, at the time when it was erected'. But not having had experience then of its pernicious effects, and confidering it as intended for the chastisement of Jews and infidels, they only murmured and complained; till, the yoke being wreathed about their necks, the most secret murmurings became dangerous, and often fatal to those who uttered them.

By this tribunal, a visible change was wrought in the temper of the people; and referve, distrust, and jealousy, became the distinguishing character of a of the people. Spaniard. It perpetuated and confirmed the reign of ignorance and superstition. It inflamed the rage of religious bigotry; and, by the cruel spectacles to which, in the execution of its decrees, it familiarized

the character

.obeleT to

Mariana, Mariana, lib. zxiv. c. 16. p. 137. Vol. I.

re

pr

Or

in

th

ha

th

ki

an

ma

di

lat

Bu

Ne

pre

ag

no

gu

int

Th

ing

of

the

WO

not

rig

ho

def

em

to

yie

the people, it nourished in them that ferocious spirit, BOOK which, in the Netherlands and America, they IV. 1559. manifested by deeds that have fixed an everlasting

reproach on the Spanish name.

But these considerations could not be apprehended by Philip; nor, if they had been suggested to him, would they have had any influence upon his conduct. He had imbibed, in all its virulence, that spirit of bigotry and persecution, which gave birth to the inquifition. He regarded heretics as the most odious of criminals; and considered a departure in his subjects from the Romish superstition, as the most dreadful calamity that could befal them. He was therefore determined to support the inquisitors with all his power, and he encouraged them to exert themselves, in the exercise of their office, with the utmost diligence.

The zeal and vigilance of these men fully corresponded to that ardor with which their sovereign was inflamed; yet so irresistible in this age was the spirit of innovation, and so great the force of truth, that the opinions of the reformers had found their way even into Spain, and were embraced openly by great numbers of both fexes, among

whom there were both priests and nuns.

Caranza Abp. of Toledo.

Even the archbishop of Toledo, Bartlemi di Caranza y Miranda, was, from certain propositions contained in a catechism which he published, suspected to have espoused them. The inquisitors informed the king of the grounds of their suspicion, and defired to receive his instructions for their conduct. Caranza had been univerfally

hey ting prested pon nce, ave the ture the He tors xert vith rreeign was e of und ced ong di ofired,

tors

fpi-

for

ally

irit,

respected as one of the most virtuous and learned prelates in Spain. Having, when provincial of the order of St. Dominique, been carried by Philip into England, as a person well qualified to promote the re-establishment of popery in that kingdom, he had labored with fo much zeal for that end, and thereby recommended himself so powerfully to the king, that in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-feven, Philip advanced him to the primacy. His first employment after attaining this high dignity was to administer spiritual comfort to the late emperor, whom he attended in his last distress. But the memory of his merit and fervices was now obliterated. Philip wrote to the inquisitors from the Netherlands, that they must, without hesitation. proceed against the archbishop as they would do against other delinquents; and that they should not spare even his own son, if they sound him guilty of herefy. Caranza was accordingly thrown into prison, and his revenues were sequestrated. The propositions in his catechism, at which the inquisitors had taken offence, were held to be of a disputable nature even among the catholics themselves. It is probable, however, that sentence would have been pronounced against him, had not the pope interposed, and claimed an exclusive right to decide the cause. Philip, anxious for the honor of the holy office, to whole power he was defirous that no bounds should be prescribed, employed all his interest to prevail on the pontiff to drop his pretensions. But at last he himself yielded; and Caranza, after having languished in

BOOK 1V. 1559. IV. 1559. prison for fix years and seven months, was transported to Rome, where he was released from confinement, but died in a few weeks after he

Before Philip's arrival in the city of Valladolid,

W

ob

no

w

fta

"

"

fte

ci]

cc t

tac

qui

law

boo

cele

fifty

any

time

men

Spai

his

prov

of 1

malo

C. I

P

was fet at liberty '.

An Auto-de-fe at Valladelid,

Philip.

an Auto-de-fe had been celebrated, in which a great number of protestants were committed to the flames. There were still in the prisons of the inquifition more than thirty persons, against whom the same dreadful punishment had been denounced. witnessed by Philip, eager to give public proof as early as possible of his abhorrence of these innovators, defired the inquifitors to fix a day for their execution; and he resolved to witness it. The dreadful ceremony (more repugnant to humanity, as well as to the spirit of the christian religion, than the most abominable sacrifices recorded in the annals of the pagan world) was conducted with the greatest folemnity which the inquisitors could devise; and Philip, attended by his fon Don Carlos, by his fifter, and by his courtiers and guards, fat within fight of the unhappy victims. After hearing a fermon from the bishop of Zamora, he rose from his feat, and having drawn his fword, as a fignal, that with it he would defend the holy faith, he took an oath administered to him by the inquisitor general, that he would support the inquisition and its ministers, against all heretics and apostates,

or others who should attempt to oppose it; and

n sili no tievera or fla

^{*} Ferreras, Annis 1559 and 1565. Campana, an. 1559. Miniana, lib. v. c. 11.

would compel his subjects every where to yield BOOK obedience to its decrees.

anf-

rom

he

lid.

h a

to

the

om

ed.

as

rs,

cu-

Iful

vell

the

nals

teft

and

his

hin

g a

om

nal,

he

iifi-

ion tes.

ind

59.

1V. 1559.

Among the protestants condemned, there was a nobleman of the name of Don Carlos de Sessa, who, when the executioners were conducting him to the stake, called out to the king for mercy, faying, " And can'ft thou thus, O king, witness the tor-" ments of thy subjects? Save us from this cruel " death; we do not deserve it." " No," Philip sternly replied, " I would myself carry wood to " burn my own fon, were he fuch a wretch as " thou'." After which, he beheld the horrid spectacle that followed, with a composure and tranquillity that betokened the most unfeeling heart.

This dreadful feverity, joined with certain rigid laws, enacted to prevent the importation of Lutheran books, foon produced the defired effect. After the celebration of another Auto-de-fe', in which about fifty protestants suffered, all the rest, if there were any who still remained, either concealed their fentiments, or made their escape into foreign parts.

Philip proceeded next to fettle the civil government of the kingdom; and, according to the Spanish historians, he discovered in the choice of his ministers, and of the governors of towns and provinces, much prudence and circumspection; of which last, a historian gives the following

Yo traeria lenna para quemar a mi hijo, si fuere tan malo como vos. Cabrera, lib. v. c. 3. Miniana, l. v. C. 11.

Miniana, lib. v. c. 11. In Seville.

BOOK IV. 1559.

instance, that besides making diligent inquiry concerning the characters of the feveral candidates for office; he kept a register for his own use, in which he recorded all the vices and defects, as well as the virtues and accomplishments of each.

no

Fr

Pia

and

gre

and

fla

Ph

to

the

any

and

for

dat

Spa

Sol

tio

cau

of .

tha

affo

the

Ne

par

pel

Ifal

ner

Ma

I

He might have confined his attention to objects of this nature, and have applied himfelf wholly to the internal administration of his dominions, had he not found it necessary to provide against the hostile intentions with which the Turkish emperor. and the corfairs of Barbary, were animated against him.

Of the Turkish emperor.

The Ottoman empire was, in the present period, at the fummit of its glory, under the victorious Solyman; the greatest and the most enlightened of all the Sultans. In Persia, in Hungary, and in Africa, this heroic prince had widely extended the limits of his empire; had expelled the knights of St. John from Rhodes, which till then had been deemed impregnable; had stripped the Venetians of a great part of their territories; laid waste the coasts of Italy and Spain; and filled all Europe with admiration of his exploits, and with the terror of his name. From the time of his competition with Ferdinand in Hungary, he had regarded the princes of the house of Austria as his rivals. He had affifted Henry II. of France, first against Charles, and afterwards against Philip; as he had formerly affifted Francis against the emperor. And in the late war, although by some accident his fleet did

Miniana, lib. v. c. 11.

on-

for

ich

as

cts

to

nad

the

or,

nft

od.

ous

ied

in

the

of

een

ans

the

pe

ror

on

he

He

es,

rly

he

 lid

BOOK

IV.

1559.

not arrive in time to act in concert with that of France, yet it came afterwards under his admiral Piali, who, having landed his troops in Italy, and in the islands of Prochita and Minorca, put great numbers of the inhabitants to the sword, and carried off many hundred prisoners into slavery.

From an enemy so powerful and enterprising, Philip had much to apprehend. But he believed it to be inconsistent with the character of protector of the church, to which he aspired, to enter into any alliance with a prince who was the declared and irreconcileable enemyof Christianity; and therefore, far from proposing any terms of accommodation, he issued orders for putting the coasts of Spain and Italy into a posture of defence, lest Solyman should find leisure from his other occupations to renew hostilities.

But the Spanish monarch had more immediate The Corsains cause of inquietude from the corsains on the coast of Africa, who had become much more formidable than before by the affistance which Solyman had afforded them ever since they acknowledged him for their sovereign. They consisted of Turks, Arabs, Negroes, and Moors; the last of whom were partly natives, and partly such as had been expelled from Spain in the time of Ferdinand and Isabella. They were all men of barbarous manners, inflamed with the most bigoted zeal for the Mahometan religion, open foes to almost every

The Corfairs

Ferreras, ann. 1558.

BOOK IV. Christian power, and animated with a peculiar hatred against the Spaniards, who had often attacked them in their strong holds, and had long treated their brother Mahometans, the Morescoes in Spain, with inhumanity. They had often taken full revenge for these injuries, under the celebrated brothers, Horuc and Hayradin Barbarossas. Their principal sleet was now commanded by another corsair, of the name of Dragut, the Barbarossa of his age, and not inserior to either of the two brothers in those qualifications by which they were so eminently distinguished.

die

tra

ce

Ti

un

fhi

fuf

for

plu

nu

del

yea

Co

em

Do

Do

nin

W

he

cc f

occ

wo

and

and

ran

fou

to f

gall

tow

not

Dragut.

Born in a little village in Natolia, opposite to the isle of Rhodes, and sprung, like the Barbarossas, from the meanest parents, Dragut had, in his youth, inlifted himself on board a Turkish galley, and had ferved there for some years as a common failor. In that station he gave conspicuous proofs of his capacity. He feemed however to be governed by a paffion extremely different from that ambition which is the ordinary attendant upon genius, and to have no other end in view than to enrich himself. But as foon as he had acquired a certain fum of money, he purchased a galley of his own, and began the adventurous occupation of a corfair, in which he became remarkable for his skill in navigation, his knowledge of the feas, his intrepidity, and enterprise. His character did not remain long unknown to Hayradin Barbarossa, who was at that time high admiral of the Turkish fleet. Barbarossa gladly received Dragut into his service, and having made him his lieutenant, he gave him the command of

liar

at-

ng

oes

cen

ted

her

of

wo

ney

the

fas.

th.

nad

In

paoaf-

ich

ive

t as

ad-

be-

his

erwn

igh

re-

of

twelve of his ships of war. With this fleet Dragut did infinite mischief to all the European states who traded in the Mediterranean, the French only excepted, whose monarchs were in alliance with the Turkish emperor. He suffered no season to pass unemployed. Scarcely a fingle Spanish or Italian ship escaped him; and when he failed in taking a fufficient number of prizes, he commonly made fome fudden descent on the coasts of Spain or Italy, plundering the country, and carrying off great numbers of the inhabitants into captivity. In these descents he was generally fortunate; but in the year 1541, having landed his men in a creek in Corfica, they were fcattered along the coast, and employed in collecting their booty, when Juanetin Doria, the brave nephew of the illustrious Andrew Doria, came upon him with a superior force, took nine of his ships, and compelled him to furrender. When he was carried on board the admiral's galley, he could not restrain his indignation, but exclaimed, " And am I then doomed to be thus loaded with " fetters by a beardless youth?" a faying which occasioned his meeting with harder usage than he would otherwise have received. Both Barbarossa and Solyman interested themselves in his behalf, and made tempting offers to the Genoese for his ransom. Notwithstanding which they detained him four years in captivity; nor could they be persuaded to fet him at liberty till Barbarossa, with a hundred gallies under his command, appeared before their town, and threatened to lay it in ashes if he were not instantly released. The Genoese found it neces-

BOOK 1V.

122 HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

to

m

po fo

hi

an

gu

ca

de

en

ce

wi fhi

me

th

T

ve

be

M

Ril

fuc

ha

fac

fell

lies

M

BOOK fary to comply with this request; and Dragut, who was immediately afterwards furnished with a strong

1559.

was immediately afterwards furnished with a strong fquadron of ships by Barbarossa, and was now inflamed with redoubled hatred against all who bore the name of Christians, resumed his former occupation, and fought after opportunities, with unceasing ardor, to wreck his vengeance upon his enemies. Besides captures which he made at fea, he facked and pillaged, year after year, innumerable villages and towns in Italy and the adjacent isles. Having been dispossessed by Doria of his strong sea-port of Mohedia on the coast of Barbary, he had ample revenge afterwards on that gallant seaman, in an engagement off Naples, in which he took fix of his ships, with a great number of troops on board, and obliged Doria himself, and the rest of the fleet, to fly before him. In the year immediately following he subdued almost the whole island of Corsica, and delivered it into the hands of the French. After this, having made himfelf master of Tripoli, he fortified that place in the strongest manner. From Tripoli he issued forth as often as the feafon would permit; and after Philip's accession, and even after peace was concluded between France and Spain, he continued to practife as formerly his depredations upon the coasts of Sicily.

Expedition against Tripoli and the isle of Gerba Of these hostilities Philip had received particular information before he lest the Netherlands, and had been earnestly exhorted by the Sieur de la Valette, grand-master of the knights of Malta,

Naples, and other states which belonged to the

Spanish monarchy.

1552.

who

ong

now

who

mer

with

pon

e at

in-

ad-

a of

Bar-

galhich

r of

and

vear

hole

inds

nfelf

the

as

Phi-

ded Life

cily,

the

ular and

la

lta,

and the duke de Medina Cœli, governor of Sicily, to think feriously of putting an end to the innumerable mischiefs to which his subjects were exposed from this active corfair, by fending such a force against him as might compel him to abandon his retreat. Philip readily confented to his request: and as he was informed by la Valette, that Dragut himself was absent at that time from Tripoli. carrying on an inland war against one of the kings in Barbary, he fent immediate orders to the duke de Medina Cœli, Doria, and others, to hasten forward the preparations necessary for the intended enterprise. The pope and most of the other princes in Italy contributed their affistance, and a fleet was affembled confisting of more than a hundred Thips, having 14,000 foldiers on board. This armament, of which the duke de Medina Cœli had the chief command, set fail from Messina in the end of October 1559, and passed over to Syracuse. There it was detained by contrary winds for feveral weeks, and during that time a difease, occafioned by unwholesome provisions, carried off between three and four thousand of the troops. Medina Cœli however proceeded in his voyage, still hoping that he had force sufficient to ensure fuccess; and it is probable that he would not have been disappointed had be advanced directly and laid fiege to Tripoli. But he thought it would facilitate the reduction of that place, to make himfelf master beforehand of the isle of Gerba, which lies a few miles from Tripoli, and was held by a Moorish governor, attached to the interest of Dra-

BOOK 1V.

124 HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

BOOK gut. This island was subdued with little difficulty; IV. and a castle which had been erected upon it was, after a feeble resistance, abandoned by the Moors, whose commander swore allegiance upon the Al-

coran to the king of Spain.

It was the opinion of some of the principal officers that this castle should be immediately destroyed, and that the fleet should proceed to Tripoli without delay. But the duke was unfortunately of a different opinion, and resolved not only to preserve the castle, but to strengthen and enlarge it. In this preposterous undertaking a great deal of time was loft. Dragut had returned with his army from his inland expedition; and he had leifure not only to provide for the fecurity of the town, but to fend notice to the Grand Signor of the operations of the Christian fleet, which he represented might be attacked with great advantage in its present situation, while the commander was off his guard, and most of the forces were on shore.

Destruction of the Spanish fleet by the Turks.

Solyman embraced without hesitation the tempting opportunity which was thus presented to him. He fitted out, with the utmost expedition, a fleet of seventy four gallies, put a hundred Janissaries, besides other foldiers, on board each of them, and gave the command to his admiral Piali, with orders to proceed in his voyage as fast as possible. The Spaniards were informed of his approach by a Maltese frigate, and were thrown into great perplexity. A council of war was immediately held. Some officers were for waiting till the enemy should arrive,

and ragging fid gree con with

ma cha det he fity

and

and

in inte

oth

day

wit haft pen the the

wei

in th

the

ulty;

was,

oors,

· Al-

cipal

itely

d to

for-

not

and

reat

vith

had

the

nor

he

an-

der

ere

pt-

im.

eet

es,

nd

ers

he

al-

ty. of-

ve,

and advised Medina to give them battle. Others, among whom was the younger Doria 10, whose courage was unquestionable, were of opinion, that confidering the fickly condition of the troops, and the great diminution which they had undergone, they could not contend with fo powerful an enemy without the utmost danger of a total overthrow, and therefore that they ought immediately to retire, and conduct the fleet to a place of fafety. duke de Medina Cœli, a man of no experience in maritime affairs, and utterly unqualified for the charge which he had undertaken, was at a loss to determine to which of the two measures proposed he should give the preference. There was a necesfity for embracing instantly either the one or the other. Yet he balanced between them for some days, and still continued to make the troops work in completing the fortifications of the castle, till intelligence was brought him that the enemy were

There was no time now to put the fleet into a posture of defence. Both the mariners and soldiers were overwhelmed with terror; and each crew, without waiting for the word of command, made haste, with oars and sails, to escape from the impending danger. Several ships soundered among the slats and shallows. Others were driven back by the wind, or by the enemy, and wrecked upon the island. Some escaped, and particularly those

at hand, and steering directly towards the island.

The elder Doria was prevented from taking a parc in this expedition by the infirmities of old age.

BOOK IV. 1559. BOOK 1V.

1559.

which belonged to the order of St. John, through their superior acquaintance with the coast. Above thirty were taken by the Turks; about one thousand men were killed or drowned, and five thousand taken prisoners. Medina Cœli, with Doria and some other principal officers, passed in the night through the middle of the enemy's sleet, and arrived safe at Malta; having, before his departure, committed the charge of the fort of Gerba to Don Alvaro de Sande, to whom he gave the strongest assured affurances of speedy assistance and relief.

The fiege of the fort of Gerba by the Turks.

This valiant Spaniard had very little reason to trust to these assurances, and could not expect to be able to hold out long against so great a sorce as he knew would be employed against him; especially as he was but indifferently surnished with provisions, and was much more likely to find enemies than friends in the natives of the island. Notwithstanding these discouraging circumstances, he readily undertook the arduous task assigned him; and having got his garrison augmented by the crews of those ships which, in attempting to make their escape, had been driven back upon the coast, he prepared with great alacrity for a vigorous defence.

Piali lost no time after his victory, but immediately landed his troops and began the siege. He was furnished with artillery by Dragut, who brought it himself, together with some fresh forces, from Tripoli. About twelve thousand Turks, besides the islanders and other Moors, were employed in the siege. In their first approaches many of them were killed. But soon after their battery had been

uni laid gar and wa ma wh By

Ale fift floo def Me

cor

fur

dui bre the who

ing

hon dier

the

" lo defi vict read

nigh

ugh

ove

ou-

and

and

ght

ved

om-

Al-

gest

1 to

t to

e as

ally

ons.

han

ling

der-

got

hips

had

vith

me-

He

ight

rom

ides

the

rere

een

unmasked, a great part of the wall of the fort was BOOK laid in ruins. The besieged in the mean time began to fuffer greatly from the heat of the feafon, and from the scarcity and unwholesomeness of the water and provisions. Great numbers died, and many, grown impatient under the hardships to which they were exposed, deferted to the enemy. By these men Piali was informed of the distressed condition of the garrison; and he invited them to furrender, and promised to spare their lives. Don Alvaro rejected this offer with disdain, and still perfifted in the defence. But at length finding that his End of July flock of provisions was almost spent, and having despaired of the relief which had been promised by Medina, he called together the garrison, which amounted now only to one thousand men, and having reminded them of the glory which they had acquired, and informed them that they had neither bread to support their bodies, nor numbers to defend the fort any longer, he defired them to refolve, whether they would give themselves up tamely to be the flaves of their barbarous enemy, or imitate the example which he would fet them, and die with their arms in their hands, fighting bravely for the honor of their religion and their country. The foldiers called out with one voice, "That they chose " death rather than flavery; and were ready to fol-" low wherefoever he should lead them. " He then defired they would refresh themselves with such victuals as still remained, and hold themselves in readiness to leave the fort about the middle of the night.

IV. I559.

B O O K 1V.

At that time they fet out, by the gate which looked towards the fea, and having passed a triple rampart, which had been thrown up to prevent their fallies, they made dreadful bavock among the Turks, and had almost reached the general's tent, when they were put to a stand by the Janissaries. They fought long and desperately; but at last, the whole Turkish camp being up in arms, they were overpowered by numbers, and almost all of them were flain. Alvaro, with two officers who had kept near him, forced his way through the thickest part of the enemy, till he reached the shore, and got on board a Spanish ship which had been stranded. There he was standing at day-break, with his target in one hand and his fword in the other, furrounded by the Turkish soldiers, who would have quickly buried him under their darts, if their officers, who highly respected his heroic valor, had not restrained them. Having been urged by a Genoese renegado to lay down his arms, and affured of receiving a treatment fuitable to his rank and merit, he at last consented to surrender himself to Piali ".

Such was the conclusion of this unfortunate enterprise; the failure of which, and all the calamities which ensued, seem to have been owing principally to the weakness, obstinacy, and inexperience of the commander in chief; yet we do not find that Philip ever expressed any distatisfaction with his conduct.

He

He

in '

por

hav

war

or

defe

app

he

Tu

WO

the

0.10

the

wei

had

utm

the

pre

of a

his

Ital

P

Hal

Vice

defi

fort

five

by

1 19

He was carried to Conftantinople with the other prifoners, and was afterwards fet at liberty, by an article in a treaty of peace between the Sultan and the emperor of Germany.

He either viewed it in a different light from that in which it has been represented by the contemporary historians; or he considered, that it would have been a tacit acknowledgment of his own want of discernment, to accuse, of imprudence, or incapacity, a person whom he had judged deferving of fo great a truft. Instead of this, he applied himself to provide against the effects which he had reason to dread from the success of the Turkish arms. He could hardly doubt that Piali would pursue his victory, and make a descent on the coasts of Spain or Italy. and would need super

The inhabitants were every where agitated with the most alarming apprehensions. Watch-towers were raifed along the coaft; and the fleet, which had lately fuffered fo much, was repaired with the utmost diligence. But these preparations, although they were afterwards found useful, were not at present necessary. Solyman having other objects of ambition which engroffed his attention, recalled his fleet to Constantinople, and thus delivered the Italians and Spaniards from their prefent fears

Philip foon afterwards received intelligence that The flege of Hascem, son of the celebrated Barbarossa, and farquivir. viceroy of Algiers under Solyman, had formed a defign upon Oran and Mafarquivir, two strong forts on the coast of Barbary, which had been in the possession of Spain since the year one thousand five hundred and nine, when they were subdued by cardinal Ximenes. In order to frustrate this

12 Cabrera, lib. v. c. 5. 8. 12. 13. Miniana, liby v. command, gave, if possible, fill stronger person

VOL. I.

hich

iple

rent

the

ent,

ries.

the

vere

nem

cept

part

got

led.

rget

ded

kly

vho

ain-

ene-

ing

at

en-

ties ally

the

ilip

uct.

pri-

in

of

e

BOOK IVI 1550.

IV: 1559;

eath ban and

defign, a fleet of twenty-four gallies had been ordered to fail to Oran, for the reinforcement of the garrifon, but this fleet had been overtaken in the middle of its course by a dreadful storm, in which two and twenty of the ships were lost, and

upwards of four thousand men.

By this accident Hascem was encouraged to proceed in his projected enterprise. Having persuaded several of the Mahometan princes in Barbary to affist him with their troops, he arrived in the neighbourhood of Oran early in the spring, with a fleet of more than thirty ships, and an army of a hundred thousand men. Of the two places which he intended to attack, only Masarquivir is a sea-port, and Oran lies at the distance of near a league from it. With so great an army he was enabled to block up both places at once; but he began his operations with the siege of Masarquivir, which, though of greater importance by reason of its situation, was not so strongly fortisted.

The count de Alcaudete, the Spanish governor, who had foreseen the approaching storm, had provided to the utmost of his power for the security of the places committed to his care; and both he and his brother Don Martin de Cordova, to whom he committed the chief command in Masarquivir, were determined to hold out to the last extremity. Many bloody rencounters passed between the contending parties, in the sallies which Alcaudete made from Oran; and in these the Spaniards had generally the advantage. Don Martin, and the troops under his command, gave, if possible, still stronger proofs

of in wall Hall and the not combra from eith

the with relias who with flee

odi

imp

doc

de vir arri Hai rest emp

exp and oth been

nt of

n in

, in

and

pro-

ided

Mille

our-

t of

dred

ded

ran

Vith oth

vith

ater

t fo

or,

oro-

of

and

he

ere

any

ing

om

the

his

ofs

of intrepidity in their defence of Malarquivir. The BOOK walls were laid in ruins by the enemy's artiflery. Hascem made eleven different assaults, and his standard was raifed again and again upon the ruins of the walls; yet he was finally repulsed and obliged, notwithstanding his numbers, to yield to the unconquerable obstinacy of the Spaniards. These brave men, however, were now fenfible, that, from the want of provisions, they must ere long either throw away their lives, or submit to that odious flavery to which they knew that the implacable hatred of their ungenerous enemy had doomed them. 1371 old schilore benight had acre?

Philip was not ignorant of the diffress to which The flege of they were reduced; and he had exerted himself oran raised by the Spawith great activity in making preparations for their niards. relief. But as Masarquivir was blocked up by sea as well as by land, it was necessary that the supplies which he had provided should be accompanied with a fleet superior to that of the enemy. Such a fleet he at last collected from Italy and the seaports in Spain, and gave the command of it to Don Francis de Mendoza, with instructions to fail for Masarquivir with the utmost expedition. Mendoza happily arrived in time. Having come unexpectedly upon Hascem's fleet, he took nine ships, and put the rest to flight; and Hascem himself, who had been employed for fome days in preparing for a new affault, perceiving the danger to which he was exposed from the Spanish fleet on the one hand; and the garrifons in Oran and Mafarquivir on the other, raifed the fiege precipitately, after it had

IV.

IV. 1559.

BOOK lasted for three months; and marched off with all his forces to Algiers. The Spaniards purfued for feveral miles, but finding they were unable to overtake him, they returned; and the fleet, after reinforcing the garrifons of Oran and Masarquivir, fet fail for Spain, where they were received with great rejoicing. The count de Alcaudete was foon after made viceroy of Navarre; Don Martin received diffinguished marks of the royal favor; and all the officers, and even private foldiers, were rewarded in proportion to their rank and merit ".

the

an

litt

mo

wl

the

di

att

au

th

po

he

uf

V

dr

fo

of

pe

rei

lie

lef

pr

eff

P

pr

en

CO

fer

qu

The reduction of Pennon de Velez by the Spaniards.

During the absence of the fleet, the trade of Spain had fustained confiderable prejudice from the depredations of a celebrated corfair, of the name of Cara Mustapha, who, with a squadron of six or feven ships, traversed the Mediterranean with unwearied activity, and made innumerable captures. His retreat was a fort on the African coast. called Pennon de Velez, which, in those days, before the invention of bombs, was reckoned almost impregnable. It is situated on a steep and rugged rock, and is inaccessible, except by a narrow path, cut out in the rock itself; which is separated from the continent by a channel, capable of containing about a dozen of those ships which were usually employed in cruifing. This rock was fortified, both above and below, with a wall, flanked with bastions, and mounted with cannon; and afforded a constant shelter and protection to the corfairs, when purfued. From its fituation near

[&]quot; Cabrera, lib. vi. Herrera Hist. Gen. del Mondo, lib. v. c. 3. and 4.

h all

for

e to

after

ivir,

with

oon

re-

and

vere

t ".

of

the

ame

fix

vith

tu-

aft,

ys,

al-

and

a

is

ble

ich

ras

II.

n;

to

ar

V.

the straits, these corsairs could annoy the Christians, while they themselves were exposed to very little danger; and it was become an object of the most serious concern to all the Christian powers who traded in the Mediterranean, to wrest it from them.

B O O K 1V. 1559.

In confequence of a report which gained credit, that Solyman intended this year to make an attack either on Spain or Italy, Philip had greatly augmented his naval force; but when he found that either there had been no ground for this report, or that the Sultan had changed his defign, he thought, that he could not employ his fleet more usefully than by attempting to reduce Pennon de Velez, which had been long an object of much dread to his subjects.

Not fatisfied with his own numerous fleet, he folicited assistance from Portugal, from the knights of Malta, and from his allies in Italy; nor did he permit them to fet fail from Malaga, the place of rendezvous, till he had collected above ninety gallies, besides fixty ships of a smaller size, with no less than thirteen thousand soldiers on board. The providing of fo great a force was not merely an effect of that extraordinary caution with which Philip commonly entered upon any military enterprife; and fuch a number of troops could not be employed in belieging a place of fuch small extent as Pennon de Velez; but, as the Moors in the country adjacent, were deeply interested in the prefervation of the fort, on account of immense quantities of commodities of all kinds, and the

K 3

number of Christian slaves which were daily fold to them by the corfairs, there was reason to appre-1559. hend that they would consider the cause of these pirates as their own, and give all the opposition in their power to the Spaniards, in the operations

of the fiege.

Agreeably to this perfuation, the allies no fooner arrived upon the coast, than great numbers of these barbarians appeared among the hills, by the foot of which the army were obliged to pass in their way to the fort. But these tumultuary troops were not able to prevent the Spaniards from landing; nor, although they gave them some annoyance on their march, could they obstruct the operations of so formidable a body of regular forces. Still, however, it was the opinion of feveral of the allies, that after all that could be done to reduce a fort of fo fingular a conftruction, they would in the iffue find it necessary to abandon their attempt. This would probably have happened, if Mustapha himself had been prefent. But, in order to fave his ships from falling a prey to the enemy, he had left the place Tome time before, and given the command of it to a renegado, of the name of Ferret, with two hundred Turks under him, and ammunition and provisions sufficient to ferve for a much longer time than the blockade was likely to continue.

He believed that the Spaniards would foon perceive the folly of their undertaking; and was therefore employed in his usual practice of cruising, with very little concern about the fate of his retreat. But he had been deceived in his opinion of those to

im int arn we bat the the the

nig

as del

wh

thi OV ble mo nui COL

1 Hin

-43

the

rev

14

e-

fe

n

ns

er

ſe

ot

y

ot

r,

ir

0

r,

T

1-

d

d

d

n

e

0

1

r

BOOK

IV.

1559.

whom he had committed a charge of fo great importance. Both the governor and garrison were intimidated by the fight of that powerful fleet and army which now encompassed them. No sooner were some of their guns dismounted by a Spanish battery, and a part of the wall demolished, than they were struck with the most violent panic, and the governor, and most of the garrison, made their escape to the continent in the middle of the night, by swimming. Such of them only remained as could not swim; and by these men the fort was delivered to the Spaniards.

There was much good fortune and little glory in this valuable conquest; but the joy which it excited over all the southern coast of Spain was inexpressionable; and it was the more complete, as well as the more generally diffused, because only a very small number had been killed or wounded in their rencounters with the Moors. Don Garcia de Toledo, the commander in chief, was, soon after his return, rewarded by Philip, with the viceroyalty of Sicily ...

Cabrera, lib. vi. c. 17. Ferreras, part xiv. Vertor's Hift. of the Knights of Malta.

excirpating the opinions of the proteffants, but

perfecutions; which was exercised assemb them

with the fame nordering fevering as if they had been quilty of the neod arresions enthest that it fove appeared how involving the large that barbarous are cedime was to the purpole which the Ross its intended. That, bloody built, which were paid-lifted, those has which were lighted up, and the

The perfect tion of the protestance.

HISTORY

tangel ek of the Reign of

PHILIP THE SECOND,

observation, colored to the grant on the colored to the colored to

as really not swing and by their men the fort was all the configuration of a second for the second fixture and find closy in

B O O K V.

2005

Page.

DURING the course of those military operations which have been described, Philip beheld with much anxiety the rapid progress of herefy in almost every state in Europe except Spain; and, in order to obstruct it, he employed all his influence to procure the convocation of a general council of the church.

The perfecution of the protestants. In the first years of the reformation, the bigotry of those who adhered to the ancient superstition, suffered them not to think of any other means of extirpating the opinions of the protestants, but persecution; which was exercised against them with the same unrelenting severity, as if they had been guilty of the most atrocious crimes. But it soon appeared how inadequate this barbarous procedure was to the purpose which the Romanists intended. Those bloody edicts which were published, those fires which were lighted up, and that

to p empexti tefta that caul ance they then degi

num

fuffe

Se

In a num in contract that ble felve fubje their might print of he than the a judication

with

variety of torments which priefts and inquisitors BOOK invented with ingenious cruelty, ferved in reality to propagate the doctrines against which they were. employed, and contributed to inflame, rather than extinguish, that ardent zeal with which the protestants were animated. Being firmly persuaded, that the cause which they maintained, was the cause of God and truth, and that their perseverance would be rewarded with a happy immortality, they courted their punishments instead of avoiding them; and in bearing them, they displayed a degree of fortitude and patience, which, by exciting admiration in the beholders, produced innumerable profelytes to the faith for which they fuffered.

Several princes had been converted to that faith. In some states the protestants had become more numerous and powerful than their opponents; and in others, their opinions fo generally prevailed, that the catholic princes found it no longer possible to extirpate them, without depriving themfelves of great multitudes of their most industrious fubjects, on whom the wealth and importance of their states depended. The time when perfecution might have proved effectual was past, and the princes came at length to perceive the necessity of having recourse to some more gentle means than had been hitherto employed. They were at the same time sensible, notwithstanding their prejudices against the reformers, that some reformation was extremely necessary; they had long borne with great impatience the numberless encroach-

y

n

d

1559.

BOOK

V. 1519.

ments of the court of Rome; and were convinced, that if some abuses were removed, it would not be impracticable to persuade the protestants to return into the bosom of the church.

A general council de. fired by the catholic princes.

A general council appeared to be the only expedient by which this important end could be obtained; and the late emperor Charles had taken infinite pains to procure the convocation of that affembly. In former times the councils of the church had been convened by the emperors themfelves; but, in the time of Charles, the power of calling them was, by all true catholics, confidered as the peculiar prerogative of the popes; who dreaded, that such assemblies might derogate from their usurped authority, and were therefore inclined, if possible, to prevent them from being held. With the timid Clement, Charles employed all his art and influence to procure a council, but in vain. Paul the third was likewise exceedingly averse from this measure; but the emperor being feconded by almost all the catholic princes in Europe, Paul yielded to their importunities, and summoned a council to meet in Trent. From this place it was afterwards translated to Bologna. After the death of Paul it was again affembled in Trent in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-one, and continued to be held there till the year following; when it was prorogued for two years, upon war being declared against the emperor, by the elector of Saxony.

In the feffions which were held under Paul, that fundamental tenet of the reformers, by which the hele was to t trac

of t of i of a of I atta of i exp thou and and prin of t

imm the and land and land notv been ever com that the

than

the writings of the evangelists and apostles are held to be the only rule of the Christian faith, was condemned; and equal authority, was ascribed to the books termed Apocryphal, and to the oral traditions of the church.

d,

ot

e-

y

oc

nat

ne

n-

of ed

m

n-

g

l.

d-

or

es

,

m

a.

d

11

or

10

1,

h

From the manner in which the deliberations of this affembly were conducted; from the nature of its decisions, and from the blind attachment of a great majority of its members to the court of Rome, there was little ground to hope for the attainment of those ends for which the calling of it had been so earnestly desired. But no other expedient could be devised, which the catholics thought so likely to stop the progress of heresy; and therefore, as soon as the war between France and Spain was concluded, the several catholic princes began to think seriously of the restoration of the council.

The state of Europe at that time seemed more than ever to require the application of some immediate remedy. The power and number of the protestants were every day becoming more and more considerable. Both England and Scotland had disclaimed allegiance to the see of Rome, and new-modelled their religion. In the Netherlands the resormers had greatly multiplied of late, notwithstanding the most dreadful cruelties had been exercised against them; and in France, where every province was involved in the most terrible combustion, there was ground to apprehend, that they would soon become too powerful for the catholics, and be able to wrest from them

BOOK V.

1560. The state of Europe.

V. 1560.

BOOK the reins of government. The new opinions had penetrated even into Italy, and had been embraced by a confiderable number of persons both in Naples and Savoy. From the former of thefe States they were extirpated by the unrelenting feverity of Philip; who iffued orders to his viceroy to put all heretics to death without mercy, and even to pursue with fire and sword a remnant of them who had fled from Cosenza, and were living quietly among the mountains '.

flib

" I

dor

div bot

will

inft

that

No whi

he i justi

redu cefs

which

affift

exec

Rom

unfor

enga

jects .

reafo

Th

preve

Savoy

· H

exercif

them

fofferin

he loft

TI

The pope's in France.

But the duke of Savoy, unwilling to deprive dread of na. himself of so great a number of useful subjects in Sayoy and as had been converted to the protestant faith, was inclined to attempt to enlighten and convince them; and with this view he defired the pope's permission to hold a colloquy of the principal ecclefiaftics in his dominions, on the fubject of religion. Pius was about the same time informed, that in France a resolution had been embraced to have recourse to the same expedient. He believed that no measure could be devised more likely to prove fatal to that exclusive prerogative which he claimed, of judging in matters of religion. He dreaded that the example of France and Savoy would be quickly followed by other States, and the decrees of provincial fynods fubstituted in the place of those of the Holy See. It highly concerned him, therefore, to prevent this measure (so pernicious to his authority) from taking place. Nor did he find much difficulty in

wet our same to

F. Paul , lib. v. slore ou bus , railous , rail

d

1-

h

[e

g

e-

,

n-

d

re

ts

1,

n-

1e

n-

b-

ie

en

t.

d

e-

TS

ce

er

b-

e. nt

m

in

1560.

diffuading the duke of Savoy from adopting it. BOOK " If the heretics, said he to the duke's ambassador, stand in need of instruction, I will fend divines and a legate, by whom they may be both instructed and absolved. But your master will find, that they will lend a deaf ear to all the instructions that can be given them, and will put no other interpretation upon his conduct, but that he wants power to compel them to fubmit. No good effect was ever produced by that lenity which he inclines to exercise; but from experience. he may learn, that the fooner he shall execute justice on these men, and make use of force to reduce them, the more certain will be his fuccess; and if he will comply with the counsel which I offer, he shall receive from me such affiftance as will enable him to carry it into execution. "

The duke, who was fincerely attached to the Romish faith, and closely connected with Philip, unfortunately yielded to these persuasions, and engaged in a bloody war with his protestant subjects, of which he had afterwards the greatest reason to repent '.

The pope met with much more difficulty in His aversion preventing a national fynod in France, than in to the calling Savoy; and was obliged to promise, that he

He found it necessary at last to grant them the free exercise of their religion, after having been worsted by them in feveral skirmishes among the mountains, and fuffering a total overthrow in a pitched battle, in which he loft 7000 of his troops. F. Paul, lib. v.

V. 1560.

BOOK should call a general council without delay. Pius had, before his promotion, taken an oath to this purpose, as all the other cardinals had likewise done, before they proceeded to his election. But no fooner had he ascended the papal throne, than he adopted the fentiments of his predecessors; and showed that he entertained the same aversion to this affembly which they had so uniformly manifested. He remembered the motives which had determined Paul the third to dissolve it, under the color of a translation to Bologna. He reflected on the danger to which Julius had been exposed, and from which his good fortune and the war of Germany had delivered him; and he confidered. that as there was now no prince fo powerful as Charles, by whom the prelates could be overawed, they would probably assume a bolder tone in the council, and attempt to advance their own prerogatives on the ruins of the papacy.

He finds it ne. ceffary to confent to it.

For these reasons he would gladly have eluded the performance of his oath. But so great was his dread of the fatal confequences which might arife from a national fynod in France, and fo earnest the importunity of Philip, of the emperor, and other catholic princes, that he at last thought it necessary to comply with their request; resolving to employ all his attention in providing against the dangers to which his authority would be thereby exposed.

After many delays, which Pius knew well how to interpose, the bull of convocation, summoning the council to meet in Trentat Easter, was published

in I one we Ch

dete in t that The imp quei wer feffic ants tion The read of c affen new in co feque the c

they no m and i that : ceedin views

His d

In

minif

in the confistory on the twenty-ninth of September one thousand five hundred and fixty; and nuncios were dispatched to give intimation of it to all the Christian powers.

S

e

t

n

n

y

h

r

d

f

,

15

r-

e

n

d

15

34

0

г,

it

1-

A

e

W

g

d

BOOK V. 1560.

determine whether the council should be mentioned convocation. in the bull as a new one, or as a continuation of that which had been held under Paul and Julius. The decision of this point, seemingly of small importance, was rendered difficult by the confequences which it involved. For if the continuation were declared, then all those decrees of the former fessions, which were levelled against the protestants, would be held facred, and receive the fanc-

tion of the council that was about to be convened.

The protestants would consider themselves as al-

ready condemned, and pay no regard to the bull

of convocation. Whereas, if in this bull the

affembly to be summoned were denominated a new council, they might expect that all the points

in controverly would be discussed anew, and con-

fequently, might be perfuaded to fend deputies to

The pope and cardinals were greatly at a loss to The bull of

the council, and to acknowledge its authority. In this the emperor and the queen mother and ministers of France were deeply interested; and they urged with great earnestness, that in the bull no mention should be made of the former sessions. and no occasion given the protestants to suspect that any restriction would be laid upon the proceedings of the council. Philip was governed by views and fentiments of a very different pature, His detestation of the protestants prevented him

BOOK V. 1560.

from relishing any other method of dealing with them, but that of force. He was utterly averse from making any concessions to reconcile them; and he defired the celebration of the council, not fo much in order to recover those who had already revolted from the church, as either to prevent others from following their example, or, as Pius afterwards suspected, to increase the power of the bishops and princes, by abridging the jurisdiction of the pope; to whose exorbitant pretensions Philip was in reality adverse, notwithstanding that devoted attachment to the Holy See which he affected, in order to promote his ambitious defigns. With these views and fentiments, Philip did not defire that the protestants should come to the council. He believed that their presence would ferve only to perplex and retard its deliberations. He apprehended, that to fuffer the decrees of the former fessions to be again discussed, would contribute to invalidate the authority of the council itself: and for this reason he thought it necesfary that the intended meeting should be declared a continuation of the council which had formerly been prorogued.

In this matter Philip's fentiments were entirely conformable to those of the pope; but Pius durst not, on this occasion, run the risk of giving offence either to the emperor or to the court of France; and therefore, after long deliberation, he couched the bull of convocation in fuch ambiguous expressions, as might be interpreted to fignify either a new council, or a continuation of the former.

This

Th ten tire diff bee was Fre cath fiaft time

I title chu tion by 1 T this Saxo amb tion. repli dina which noth gene heal

firab

from

which

could

from

h

ſe

1;

ot

ly

nt

us

ne

n

ns

at

he

le-

ip

ne

ce

e-

es

ıld

ın-

ef-

ed

ly

rft

ng

of

he

us

er

er.

This expedient had, in some degree, the effect intended. Although neither of the parties was entirely fatisfied, yet neither of them was fo much difgusted as either the one or the other would have been, if the terms had been explicit: and the bull was at length received by the emperor and the French king, as well as by Philip, and the other catholic princes; who all gave orders to the ecclefiafties in their dominions to repair to Trent at the time appointed.

In the bull, only bishops, abbots, and others en- The protitled to vote by the rules and ancient practice of the tellants rea church, were summoned to attend. But an invita- tend the tion was carried to the feveral protestant powers, council. by two nuncios, Martinengo and Commendone.

The protestant princes in Germany were, on Their res this occasion, assembled at Naumburgh, in Upper-Saxony; and to that place the emperor fent three ambassadors, to second the nuncios in their invitation. To the imperial ambassadors, the princes replied in terms expressive of their respect for Ferdinand. They thanked him for the folicitude which he discovered in their behalf; and said, that nothing would be more agreeable to them than a general council, provided it were calculated to heal the divisions of the church. But no such defirable effect, they thought, could be expected from the council to which they were now invited; which was called by one whose authority they could not acknowledge; and in which (as appeared from the bull of convocation) only those were to Vol. I.

BOOK 1960,

BOOK have decifive votes, who had fworn allegiance to the pope, and the see of Rome.

1560.

The nuncios, however, were brought in, and briefs were delivered by them from the pope to each of the princes; but these briefs were on the next day returned unopened, with the following declaration: " That as they did not acknowledge any jurisdiction in the bishop of Rome, there was no reason why they should explain to him their sentiments of the council, which they had already done to the emperor '.

cm

iA

all

licit

in l

enc

cati

to t

pov

ann

1

end

cert

refic

at t

who

diffi

and

affer

in t

mitt

prel

and

in th

pum

on h

porit

fion

to h

ny

defra

From Naumburgh the nuncios fet out for England and Denmark; but they were obliged to stop short, Martinengo in the Low Countries, and Commendone at Lubec; the latter having been forbid to proceed by Frederic, and the former by Eliza. beth, both of whom had refolved to give no en-

couragement to the intended council.

meets at Trent, and and his legates.

of an aller

·wot field T

....

The council The opinion which the protestants entertained of the finister intentions of the pope was fully justiis governed fied by the event. In the very first decree of the by the pope first fession, when many of the prelates were not yet arrived, his regates, who prefided in this affembly, procured it to be enacted, that they only should propose the several questions to be discussed; and thus they made at once effectual provision against all attempts to correct any of the numberless abuses in the court of Rome, for remedying which the meeting of the council had been defired. Against this decree Philip and the other princes remon-Arated in the most importunate manner, and

F. Paul, lib. v.

employed their interest, both with the pope and in the council, to procure the repeal of it. But all their endeavours were ineffectual. Their folicitude on this head served only to confirm Pius in his suspicions of their having formed a design to encroach on his authority. He eluded their applications with confummate artifice, and fent orders to the legates to make all the opposition in their power to any proposal which might be made for

annulling the decree.

to

nd

to

he

de-

lge

vas

en-

dy

ng-

op

m-

oid

za.

en-

ed

Ai-

he

ret

y,

old

nd

nft

fes

he

nft

on-

nd

This did not prevent feveral of the prelates from Vain atendeavouring to perfuade the council to establish certain points, fuch as the divine institution and the power of the refidency of bishops, which would have struck deep pope. at the root of the papal power. The pope, from whom the legates received instructions on every difficult emergency, was kept in perpetual anxiety; and he fometimes thought of fuddenly diffolving an affembly, which he found fo difficult to keep within the bounds he prescribed to it. But, by unremitted vigilance and attention, by threatening fome prelates with his displeasure, by flattering others, and heaping promifes upon them of advancement in the church; and above all, by means of the great number of Italian bishops', who depended entirely on his favor, he fecured, in every question, a ma. jority of voices; and not only prevented any decifion from being paffed that might be detrimental to his anthority, but procured the ratification of many of those ecclesiastical usurpations which the Many of them were fo poor, that he was obliged to defray the expenses of their attendance.

BOOK V. 1560.

....

princes, who had been fo folicitous for the convocation of the council, had expected would have been abolished and condemned. These princes were greatly disappointed and chagrined. Their ambassadors, as well as the prelates, complained, that the council, far from enjoying freedom, were fettered in all their deliberations by the fecret orders which were daily fent from Rome: and on this head, remonstrances were made again and again to the pope himself, who sometimes vouchsafed a soft, evalive reply; and at other times, appearing to be greatly offended, afferted that the council was at perfect liberty; and infinuated, that the true fource of all the discontent on this head was, that the ambaffadors of the princes had not the power of dictating the decrees.

not

and

to vin

two

one ack

cil

plic firn

eve dec

to t P

ed

who

cree

thar

he h

refo

the cou

thei

ed a

pole

ratio

he c

cree the

brou

then

Whatever ground there was for this infinuation. the deliberations of the council were conducted in the same manner as before, till at length Pius. grown impatient under the perpetual attention and expense which it required from him, fent orders to his legates to bring it as foon as possible to a conclusion. And it was concluded accordingly, with the most indecent precipitation, towards the end of the year one thousand five hundred and fixty-three. without any confiderable opposition from the princes, who had long despaired of deriving from it any of those falutary effects which had been expected '. They perceived that the pope's influence over it was

Conclusion of the coun-15631

The acts were subscribed by the 4 legates, 2 cardinals, 3 patriarchs, 25 archbishops, 268 bishops, 7 abbots, 7 generals of regulars, and 39 proxies, F. Paul, lib. viii.

:5

ir

,

e

r-

is

0

.,

e

at

ce

n-

t-

1,

in

5 .

d

to

n-

th

of

e,

n-

ny

as

ls,

7

not to be controuled; and forefaw that the continuance of it must serve only to augment and strengthen his authority, which it had been their intention to circumscribe. Of this they had the most convincing evidence in the concluding fession, in which two decrees were passed that had not been mentioned before, and were manifestly designed as an acknowledgment of the fubordination of the council to the Holy See. One of thefe was. That application should be made to the pope for his confirmation of the decrees; and the other, That whatever expressions had been employed in any of the decrees, were to be understood without prejudice to the pope's authority.

Pius rejoiced exceedingly when he was informed of the diffolution of the council, and still more The pope's when he received intelligence of thefe its last de- joy on this crees. He ordained, on this occasion, a solemn thanksgiving; and in the consistory declared, that he would confirm all the decrees, and add many reformations to those which had been enacted by the council. By these reformations, some of his courtiers apprehended that the profits arising from their offices would be diminished; and they employed all their influence to diffuade him from his purpose. Pius had no intention to introduce any alterations of which they had reason to be afraid; but he confidered, that his refusing to confirm the decrees would be interpreted as a condemnation of the council; that all its acts would be thereby brought into difrepute; and that occasion might thence be taken, by the French and others, to hold

The laft de-Grees.

BOOK

V. 1564.

-di hatwar His bull of confirmation.

national affemblies. And he confidered likewife, that it would depend entirely upon himself to determine, how far any particular decree should be carried into execution. For thefe reasons he difregarded the objections of his courtiers, and published his bull of confirmation, with the usual formalities; requiring all prelates and princes to receive and enforce the decrees of the holy council of Trent; prohibiting all perfons, whether laymen or ecclefiaftics, from writing any explication of them under the form of notes or commentaries; and commanding the catholics every where to have recourse, in all dubious cases, to the Apostolic See.

Bad effects of the council.

This bull was addressed only to the catholics; the decrees of for Pins did not expect that any greater regard would be paid to it by the protestants than they had shown to his bull of convocation. The whole conduct of the council had, from the beginning, been calculated to widen, instead of closing, that breach which sublisted between them and the Roman church. The ancient religion was now more clearly afcertained. Its doctrines, the offspring of fubrile sophistry, artifice, and presumption, were formally defined; its rites, which had crept into the church in the dark ages of ignorance and fuperstition, were now made an effential part of worship; and anathemas were pronounced against all persons by whom either the former or the latter were not embrased. By this impolitic conduct the protestants were more clearly instructed where to direct their attack; and in those absurdities, into which men must fall who venture to dogmatize on subjects so

my the trit ma but COL cut bof

> ope P

fao littl Wit deep mot pref gul tbei BCW cree aftic bou tacit decr cils; impu fider ing i Calv

licite

decre

of al

03

e-

)e

0

h-

li-

ve

t;

G-

er

d-

in

ò

5:

rd

ev

le

g,

at

0-

re

of

re

to

er-

P;

DS

at

its

dH'

en

fo

mysterious as many articles of the Christian faith, they often found abundant matter of victory and triumph. No concessions of any kind had been made by the council, in order to reconcile them, but all their doctrines had been indifcriminately condemned; and henceforth all ground of hope was cut off of ever inducing them to return into the bosom of the church, by any other means but open force and perfecution.

Pius flattered himself that these means would The decrees fooner or later prove effectual; and was therefore the court of little concerned at the conduct of the protestants France. with respect to the council. He was much more deeply affected by the ill-humor which the queen mother and ministers of France discovered on the present occasion. They had been somewhat difgusted at the little regard that had been shown to their defire, of having the council declared to be a new council. They were displeased with the decrees of reformation, by some of which the ecclesiaftical jurifdiction was extended beyond its former bounds; and they were highly diffatisfied with the tacit acknowledgment contained in the concluding decrees, of the superiority of the pope above counoils; an opinion which in France had been always impugned and rejected. Influenced by these confiderations, and defirous at the same time of avoiding to give any fresh occasion of discontent to the Calvinists, the French court (although earnestly folicited by Pius) refused to receive and publish the cal a juncture, the pontiff was induced. . assisab

v. I\$64.

BOOK

of Finnes

and Spain.

the hopes of prevalaciing in cive will line Para

BOOK V.

I564. They are accepted by Philip, and other catholic princes.

Pius had reason to apprehend that the example of fo great a monarchy would be imitated by the other catholic powers. But he had the pleasure of receiving information from his nuncios, that not only the republic of Venice, and the feveral Italian princes, but most of the catholic princes in Germany, and the king of Spain, had refolved to acknow-

ledge the authority of the council.

In forming this resolution, Philip gave a striking proof of that zeal which he so uniformly felt, or affected, for the catholic religion and the Holy See. No prince was ever more jealous of his power, or more tenacious of his rights; upon some of which encroachments had been made in the decrees of reformation. During the celebration of the council, he had complained loudly of the dependance in which it was held by the pope; he had again and again endeavoured, but in vain, to get that first decree rescinded, by which the legates alone could propose the questions to be discussed; and he had likewise been highly offended with the pope's precipitate diffolution of the council, in which measure he had neither been confulted, nor had any delay been granted at his ambaffador's request. To these causes of alienation, Pius added another, which might have been attended with the most ferious confequences, by determining a dispute for precedence between the Spanish and French ambassadors at Rome, in favor of the latter. To decide this point, which was of fo delicate a nature, at fo critical a juncture, the pontiff was induced, partly by the hopes of prevailing on the court of France to

Difpute of precedence between the ambaffadors of France and Spain.

rec his in bre the

to

to vin tak ine fen Lo of if p

to the vet fure fore the

don

10.8

EX H

Ho

did

0

e

of

ot

n

a-

V-

g

f-

c.

or

ch

e-1,

m

br

leld

ad

CI-

re

ay

efe

ch

us

d-

DTS

his

iti-

by to

receive the decrees of the council, and partly by BOOK his dread that if the young king were not gratified in this matter, his counsellors would advise him to break off all connexion with Rome, and to commit decided in the supreme ecclesiastical authority in the kingdom favor of France. to a patriarch of his own election.

V.

Pius ordered his nuncio to explain these motives to the catholic king, and spared no pains to convince him of the necessity of the step which he had taken: and his endeavours were not altogether ineffectual. Philip did not, indeed, for some time, fend any ambaffador to Rome in the place of Don Louis de Requesens, who left it when the point of precedence was decided; but being determined, if possible, to live on amicable terms with the Holy See, he resolved to stifle his resentment. Nor did he fuffer it to influence his conduct with regard to the decrees of the council, which, although they were not entirely conformable to his wishes, yet would contribute, he believed, in some meafure, to prevent the progress of herefy; and therefore he iffued orders, without helitation, to have them received and obeyed throughout all his dominions ", old no and balagrans and bus and and army as might be luttiment to expel the

Julys

the sed (an

knights of

. Establ.

flow time execulty followed by great numbers of he subjects, to take rengeance on the knights of Walter, who, belides co-operating with the Spanuards in all their African expolitions, hill continued to

exercife their womed bottomics against the Turks e shi na, dal musi Christian adami. Tebuki

Cabrera, lib. vi. c. 16. Pallavicini, lib. xxiv. cap. 12.

HISTORY

at

50

bo

en

ne

m

do

lic

pe

w

Bu

tio

Car

Po

COL

Wa

to

die

fici

COL

he

as

10

fo !

Tu

ban

and

the

on;

and sold of OF THE REIGN OF THE REIGN OF

to a permanely of his own clothion.

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

Louis de Raqueleus; who left in when the point of preschence wils Ve W O O B g dereinined;

BOOK
VI.
1565.
Hoftile in.
tentions of
the Sultan
against Philip and the
knights of
Malta.

2000

1.V

mi betiech

To ruse!

·three i

it possible, to live on amicable terms with the PHILIP's attention was, foon after this, called to objects of a very different nature from those by which, during the fitting of the council, it had been engroffed. The fuccess of his enterprise against Pennon de Velez, having given great uneafiness to all the piratical flates, they had endeavoured to engage the Sultan to undertake the recovery of that fort; and had entreated him to employ such a fleet and army as might be sufficient to expel the Spaniards from the coast of Africa. Solyman was at the fame time earnestly folicited by great numbers of his fubjects, to take vengeance on the knights of Malta, who, besides co-operating with the Spaniards in all their African expeditions, still continued to exercise their wonted hostilities against the Turks

Mistra.

at fea, and had of late made innumerable cap- BOOK tures, all drown about to take as troughly based Yt. 156%

This prince was of himself as much incensed both against the former and the latter of these his enemies as any of his subjects could defire; and notwithstanding his great age, he was inflamed as much as ever with the ambition of extending his dominions. He therefore lent a willing ear to the folicitations which he now received; and having fufpended all his other pursuits, he resolved to turn his whole attention against the Maltese and Spaniards. But he hesitated whether he should begin his operations with invading Malta, or the dominions of the catholic king; and to affift him in deciding this point, he held a council of his most experienced feefon without those contenus familie rebusminos

01

603

01

1

fi.i

1 1

.

)y

en

IŁ

to

n•

at

eţ

11-

ne

of

of

ds

to

K'S

Mahomet, the oldest and wifest of all his Bashas, was of opinion, that it would be highly inexpedient to begin with invading Maka, in Subduing which, the faid, the Sultan would find infinitely greater difficulty than he had encountered formerly in the conquest of Rhodes. For the latter of these illands, he observed, lay at so great a distance from Europe, as had made it almost impossible for the Christians to fend affistance to the belieged; and was besides to large and fertite as to furnish subsistence to the Turkish troops. Whereas the former was fmall and barren; fo far from the Porte, and fo near to Sicily and Italy, that the knights could eafily receive from thence perpetual fuccours and supplies. The king of Spain was deeply concerned in their prefervation; and he, and other Christian princes, would,

BOOK VI. Z565.

from religion as well as interest, think themselves bound to support an order of men whom they had long regarded as the champions of their faith. The knights would defend their island with the utmost obstinacy. And even although the Sultan should at last get possession of it, yet a new crusade would be formed by the Christians for its recovery, and the Turkish fleet would be destroyed in the harbours, before it could be put into a posture of defence. Sicily, he thought, would be a much easier and more certain conquest. The reduction of that island would conduce more to the Sultan's glory, as well as to the interest of his empire; and it would be quickly followed by the reduction of the knights of Malta, who could not subsist a single feafon without those continual supplies of provision which that more fertile region afforded them.

gin with the fiege of Malta.

solyman re A prince of fo great penetration as Solyman folves to be- could not be infensible of the weight of these confiderations; but having been long accustomed to triumph over much more formidable enemies than the knights of Malta, and having formerly expelled the knights themselves from Asia, when their power was more confiderable than at present, he believed that they could not long resist his victorious arms. In this confidence of fuccess he was confirmed by most of the Bashas, who chose rather to flatter his inclinations at the expense of his intereft, than to run the rifk of incurring his displeafure. His refentment against the knights was greatly heightened at this time by the capture of a rich

out and he, and other Christian princes, would a

gal ites the COL can que the

F

for utn to I the Dra hole fhor the Mu fixt fide in A the then Dra offic T

feve terra whe At I mast Soly galleon belonging to some of his greatest favorites in the feraglio. These persons exerted all their influence to procure a speedy vengeance, and contributed to determine the Sultan to open the campaign with the fiege of Malta; after the conquest of which he resolved to turn his arms against

BOOK VI. 1565.

the king of Spain.

es

d

10 ft

at

ld

be

arof

ch

of

0-

it

he

rle

on

an

nto

an

eleir

he

ri-

as

er

erea-

at-

ch

10

Having thus fixed his purpose, he issued orders His prepafor equipping all the ships in his empire with the utmost expedition; fent a great number of troops to the sea-ports in the Morea, where he intended they should embark; and defired Hascem and Dragut, his viceroys in Algiers and Tripoli, to hold their corfairs ready to join his fleet when it should arrive at Malta. He gave the command of the fleet to Piali, and that of the land forces to Mustapha, an experienced general, at the age of fixty-five, who had acquired his esteem and confidence by feveral victories which he had obtained in Asia. To these men he recommended strongly the acting in concert with each other; and required them to confult in every matter of importance with Dragut, whom he regarded as the ablest naval officer in his dominions.

The news of his preparations foon reached the La Valette feveral Christian powers on the coasts of the Medi- the grandterranean. But they were for some time in doubt Malta, where the storm which was gathering would burst. At length John de la Valette Parisot, the grandmaster of Malta, received certain information of Solyman's defign, from spies whom he employed

BOOK VI.

at Constantinople. He immediately communicated his intelligence to the king of Spain, the pope, and most of the other Christian princes; and represented to them the necessity of granting their assistance at the present criss, if they would save from ruin an order of men whose bravery had for ages past been continually exerted in the protection of Christians of every nation in Europe, against the implacable enemy of the Christian name.

Philip's refolution to fupport the knights.

But although the subjects of almost every Christian state had, on numberless occasions, been supported by their generofity, and protected, or refcued from flavery, by their intrepid valor, yet only fuch princes thought it incumbent on them to interest themselves in their behalf, whose territories lay exposed to immediate danger. Of these no one had so much ground to dread the consequences of fuffering the knights to be overwhelmed, as the king of Spain. For besides that his dominions were more exposed, he was much more obnoxious to the Sultan, than any other Christian monarch. He had repeatedly committed hostilities against the African corfairs, whom Solyman had taken under his protection; and he could not call in question the intelligence transmitted to him by the grand-mafter, that as the Turkish armament was to be fent first against the knights, it would be employed next against himself. Philip had ever looked on Malta as his principal bulwark against the invalions of the Turks; and he was sensible that he had now more reason than ever to confider it in that view. Prompted by these motives,

he fer in me sho Mo

of a with not action action in House bear knig milit to 1 all the all

In halte vent their mon below of the

emp

prov

t-

٠,

e-

£-

m

es

of

ne

201 if-

p-

ef-

ét

to

ies

no

es

he

ns

us

ch.

nft

en

in

the

vas

be

ver

nft

ble

on-

es,

he resolved to exert himself with vigor in its defence; and having writ to his ministers and allies in Italy, to form an army of twenty - thousand men, which should be ready to embark on the shortest notice, he assembled a numerous fleet at Messina, and sent instructions to Don Garcia de Toledo, the viceroy of Sicily, to watch over the preservation of Malta with the same solicitude as if Sicily itself were to be attacked.

The zeal with which Philip espouled the cause The grand. of the knights, delivered them from their anxiety mafter's acwith regard to the final iffue of the war, but did vigilance, not prevent the grand mafter from exerting bis activity and vigilance in preparing for a vigorous defence. Besides sending a general summons to the knights dispersed throughout the several provinces in Europe, to repair instantly to Malta; he distributed all the inhabitants of the island capable of bearing arms into companies, and appointed the knights to train them in the feveral branches of military discipline. He caused two thousand troops to be levied by his agents in Italy, and kept all the ships belonging to the order, perpetually employed in importing arms, military stores, and provisions.

In obedience to his fummons, all the knights haltened to his affiftance, except fuch as were prevented by age or infirmities; and these supplied their personal services, by sending him all the money which they could raise out of the effects belonging to their convents. Before the arrival of the enemy, he reviewed his forces, and found

1964.

BOOK VI.

1565.

that they amounted to seven hundred knights and eight thousand five hundred foldiers, including two companies of Spaniards which were fent to him from Sicily. These troops, after a solemn religious procession, and partaking of the holy facrament, he distributed among the knights; and affigned to all of them their proper stations. In the midst of the multiplicity of affairs which demanded his attention, there was nothing omitted which human prudence could provide. He was continually employed either in visiting the posts, or examining the stores, or strengthening the fortifications, or instructing the officers as to the conduct proper to be observed in case of an attack. The wisdom displayed in his plan of defence, inspired his troops with confidence; and his tranquillity and fortitude communicated to them an elevation of mind, which rendered them superior to every calamity that could befal them.

Arrival of the Turks at Malta under Muftapha and Piali. At length the Turkish fleet having left Constantinople in the end of March, arrived in fight of Malta about the middle of May; consisting of more, than two hundred sail, and having on board, besides a great number of Christian slaves, designed to serve as pioneers, above forty thousand land forces, composed chiefly of Janissaries and Spahis, the bravest soldiers of the Ottoman empire. This formidable army landed at some distance from Il Borgo, and soon afterwards spread themselves OV

pu

off

ord

wit

lett

tw

the

per

pru

on

hun

eigl

mit

troc

fhor

fma

was

fore

knig

post

foor

refo

agre

Sult

not

But

king

fleet

T

The town where the strength of the order was con-

over the country; fetting fire to the villages putting the peafants to the fword, and carrying off fuch of the cattle, as, notwithstanding the orders of the grand-master, had not been secured within the forts and towns.

he

g

to

nn

ly

bn

he

ed

ch

n-

or

fi-

n-

k.

in-

ın-

an

Or

n-

ht

of

rd.

ed

nd

is,

nis

II

res

on-

BOOK VI. 15651

While the Turks were thus employed, La Valette fent out De Copier, marshal of the order, with two hundred horse and six hundred foot, to watch their motions. De Copier, an officer of great experience, executed his commission with so much prudence and vigor, that by falling unexpectedly on detached parties, he cut off one thousand five hundred of the Turks, with the loss of only about eighty men. But La Valette intended, by permitting these skirmishes, only to make trial of his troops, and to accustom them to the looks and shouts of the enemy. He considered that even so small a loss as was occasioned by these rencounters, was more than he could eafily support. He therefore recalled De Copier, and fent the foldiers and knights under his command to their respective posts.

The Turkish general held a council of war as The siege of foon as all his troops were landed; to affift him in St. Elmo. resolving where he should begin his attack. Piali, agreeably to what he understood to have been the Sultan's instructions, was of opinion that they ought not to enter upon action till Dragut should arrive. But Mustapha having received information of the king of Spain's preparations, thought that fomething must be done instantly for the security of the fleet, which lay at present in a creek where it was VOL. I.

101

ma

al

TI

the

ani

in

mu

fieg

faic

" 3

La

gre

die

gra

the

me.

will

han

L

was

num

agai

duce

of tl

fible

to c

to th

of tr

the '

tarne

BOOK

VI.

exposed to the violence of the east wind, and might be attacked with great advantage by the Spaniards. On this account he was of opinion, that they should immediately lay fiege to a fort called St. Elmo, which stood on a neck of land near Il Borgo, having the principal harbour on one fide of it, and on the other, another harbour large enough to contain the whole fleet in fafety. This propofal was approved by a majority of the council, and Mustapha proceeded without delay to carry it into execution. He vainly expected that he would be able to reduce the fort in a few days. But besides the valor with which it was defended, there were two circumstances which greatly augmented the difficulty of his enterprise: one of these was that the garrifon could eafily receive supplies from the town, across the great harbour, which was secured by two forts, called St. Angelo and St. Michael, or La Sangle; and the other, that his approaches to the fort were retarded by the nature of the road leading to it, which was either a bare rock, or the rock thinly covered with a stony soil. This last inconvenience he remedied, by substituing in the place of trenches, a parapet formed of planks and beams covered on the fide towards the fort with earth, which they brought from a distance, and mixed with straw and rushes. By this invention he was enabled to open a battery mounted with his largest cannon, on the fixth or feventh day after his arrival on the island; and he quickly convinced the governor, the bailiff of Negropont, that it would be impossible for him to hold out

Difficulties attending the fiege.

ht

ls.

ld

0,

о,

t,

gh

Cal

nd

to

be

les

re

he

at

he

ed

el,

es

ad he

inhe

nd

th

nd

he

his

ter

nit,

tuc

long. Of this the governor gave immediate information to the grand mafter, and made choice of a knight of the name of La Cerda for his messenger. This man, greatly disturbed by fear, exaggerated the danger which he had been fent to represent, tenable by and had the imprudence to tell the grand-mafter, in the presence of many of the knights, that he must not expect that the place would fustain the fiege above a week longer. " And what loss, " faid La Valette, " have you received that makes " you so soon despair?" " The fort, " replied La Cerda, " is to be confidered as a fick person, greatly reduced, who must receive continual remedies and supplies." " I myself, " answered the grand-master with great indignation, " will be the physician; and will bring others along with me, who, if they cannot cure you of your fear; will at least preferve the fort from falling into the hands of the Infidels."

La Valette did not expect that a place which The grand. was neither strong, nor large enough to admit a master's rea. numerous garrison, could be defended long, fending it against so great a force as was employed to re- to the last. duce it; but he thought it necessary that the fiege of this fort should be prolonged as much as posfible, in order to give the viceroy of Sicily time to come to his relief. With this view he refolved to throw himself into St. Elmo with a select body of troops; and he was preparing to fet out when the whole body of knights remonstrated with such tarnest importunity against his leaving the town,

BOOK VI. 1565: St. Elmo thought un. the garrifon.

M 2

BOOK

1565.

that he at last consented to suffer the reinforcement which he had prepared, to be conducted to the fort by a knight called De Medran, upon whose conduct and intrepidity he could rely with the most assured considence.

Progress of the fiege.

Not long after De Medran's arrival in the fort the garrifon made a vigorous fally, in which they drove the enemy from their intrenchments, and put a number of them to the sword. But the reft foon recovered from their furprife, and having returned to the charge, they compelled the Chriftians to retire. In this rencounter, the vigorous efforts of the Janissaries were favored by the wind, which blew the smoke of the guns upon the fort, and covered the belieged with a thick cloud, through which it was impossible to discern the operations of the enemy. This incident the Turks had the presence of mind to improve to great advantage. They feized, unperceived, upon the counterfearp, made a lodgment there with beams, woolfacks, and gabions; and raifed a battery upon it with incredible expedition. After the smoke was dispersed, the befieged beheld what had been done with much aftonishment; and they were the more disquieted, as the fortification which the Turks had raifed upon the counterfearp, overtopt a ravelin which lay near it, in which the befieged could no longer appear with fafety. They refolved however to defend this ravelin as long as possible, whatever it should cost them.

Arrival of Dragut. In the mean time Dragut and another noted corfair called Uluchiali arrived with twenty gallies,

ha fiv an th ex

in as waler me

fire

a

its

wh up eng bre obl

ma and the mo

int

gro

bric Tu bric e-

to

on

th

ort

ey

nd

he

ng

rif-

us

he

on

ick

ern

the

to

on

ith

la

fter

hat

hey

nch

ver-

the

hey

g as

oted

lies,

having, besides slaves and feamen, two thousand five hundred troops on board. This reinforcement and the presence of Dragut added fresh vigor to the operations of the fiege. This gallant corfair exposed himself on all occasions with the utmost intrepidity; spent whole days in the trenches; and as, besides his other extraordinary talents, he was particularly skilful in the management of artiklery, he caused some new batteries to be raised in more advantageous fituations than had hitherto been made choice of; and kept up a continual fire both upon the ravelin above mentioned, and a cavalier that covered the fort, and was one of its principal defences.

This cavalier foon became the only defence Progress of; which could prevent the befiegers from coming the fiege. up to the very foot of the walls. Some Turkish engineers having approached the ravelin at daybreak, to examine the effects of their artillery, they observed a gun-port so low, that one of them. when mounted on the shoulders of another, looked into it, and faw the Christian soldiers lying on the ground afleep. Of this they gave immediate information to the troops; who, advancing as quickly and filently as possible, and clapping ladders to the gun-hole, got up into the ravelin, and cut most of the Christians to pieces.

Between this ravelin and the cavalier lay the ditch, over which the befreged had thrown a temporary bridge of planks, leading up to the cavalier. The Turks perceiving this, leapt instantly upon the bridge, and attempted to make themselves masters

BOOK VI. 1565.

BOOK VI. 1565.

of the cavalier, as they had already done of the ravelin. But the garrison was now alarmed; the bravest of the knights hastened from different quarters to the post of danger; and, after an obstinate engagement, they compelled the Turks to retire into the ravelin. There the Janissaries observing another way of reaching the cavalier, by a path from the bottom of the ditch, they threw themselves down without dread or hesitation; and having ascended by this path to the other fide, they renewed their attack with greater fury than ever. The combat lasted from fun rife till noon, when the invincible bravery of the garrifon proved at last victorious. About twenty knights and a hundred foldiers were killed, and near three thousand of the enemy.

As the ravelin was open on the fide towards the fort, the befieged pointed fome cannon against it, and made great havock among the infidels. But Mustapha, sensible of the value of the acquisition which he had made, poured in fresh soldiers without number; and the pioneers coming forward with woolfacks, planks, and gabions, put the troops at length in fafety, and made a lodgment in the ravelin, of which the garrison were never able to

disposses them.

The grand mafter's concern on account of this difaster was greatly augmented, by considering that it could not have happened fo foon, without some negligence on the part of the garrison. He fent them however an immediate reinforcement; and both the fiege and the defence were carried on with the fame vigor as before.

0:1 COL Tu ger wa no M bre and fail the for imp

> to che rep ten a f defi be ing wer doi the thel

me

517

luc

But this com that the

the

ar-

ate ire

ing

om

wn

by

ick

ted

ery

out

ed,

the it,

But

on out

ith

ps

he

to

his

ng

ut He

ıt;

ed

But the fituation of the belieged was now become much more dangerous than formerly. The Turks applied themselves with unremitting diligence to heighten the ravelin till it overtopt the the garrison. wall of the fort; and after this, the garrison could no longer appear upon the parapet with fafety. Many were killed by the enemy's artillery. Several breaches were made in different parts of the wall, and the hearts of the bravest knights began to fail within them. They apprehended, that ere long the Turkish general would attempt to take the fort by storm, and they dreaded that it would be impossible for so small a number to resist so numerous an enemy.

They agreed therefore, though with much re. They apply luctance, to apply to the grand-master for liberty for liberty to quit the fort. to quit the fort; and they made choice of the chevalier de Medran for their messenger. De Medran represented that the fort was in reality no longer tenable, and that to continue in it, though only a few days, would infallibly occasion the utter destruction of the garrison. That nothing could be of greater advantage to the Turks than fending the forces of the order to a place where there were no fortifications to defend them; that, by doing fo, the troops necessary for the defence of the other fortreffes would foon be confumed, and these fortresses become an easy prey to the enemy. But he concluded with faying, that, although this was the opinion of all the garrison, he was commissioned to declare to the grand-master, that whatever resolution he should form, they

The diffrefs of

M 4

were determined to yield an implicit obedience to BOOK his authority. VI.

1565. Refused by the grand mafter.

Most of the knights in council thought that this request of the garrison ought to be immediately granted. But La Valette was of a contrary opinion. The fort, he acknowledged, would not probably hold out much longer; and he lamented the fate of those gallant knights and foldiers who were stationed in fo perilous a situation. But there were cases, he said, in which it was necessary to facrifice some of the members for the preservation of the body; and fuch he knew to be the prefent critical state of their affairs. For he was credibly informed that the Sicilian viceroy had declared, that if the fort of St. Elmo were loft, (as the consequence would be, that he could not attack the Turks with the same advantage as at present) he would not expose his fleet to the risk of a defeat for the fake of the rest of the island. And on a this account La Valette subjoined, that the preservation of the order depended almost entirely on the length of the present siege. This he represented to the chevalier De Medran, and fent him back with instructions to remind the knights of the vow which they took at their entrance into the order, of facrificing their lives for its defence. He likewife bade him affure them, in his name, that he would not fail to fend them fuch reinforcements as they should stand in need of, and was determined, as foon as it should be necessary, to come himself to their affistance, with a fixed, unalterable purpose

to in

> th CI CC m

> W in ni W

fw as tal

We

ca

the wa tha tha the aid giv

req itle 25 fitu

we ant to

is

ly

n.

ly

te

re

re

ri-

of

nt

ly

d,

he

ck

it)

de-

on 4

er-

OII

ted

ick

ow

ler,

rife

uld

ney

as

to

ofe

to lay down his life, fooner than deliver the fort BOOK into the hands of the Infidels.

This enforce had the defined effect on feveral of 1565.

This answer had the desired effect on several of the knights, and particularly on those whose principles of honor and attachment to the order were confirmed by years. But the greater part of them were much distaissied. They thought the grandmaster's treatment of them harsh and cruel, and wrote him a letter, subscribed by sifty-three, in which, after repeating their former request, they informed him, that if he did not, on the next night, send boats to carry them to the town, they were determined to fally out into the Turkish camp, where they might fall honorably by the sword, instead of suffering such an ignominious death as they had reason to expect, if the fort were taken by storm.

To this letter La Valette replied, "That they were much mistaken, if they expected to satisfy their honor by throwing away their lives; since it was no less their duty to submit to his authority, than to sacrifice their lives in desence of the order; that the preservation of the whole depended on their present obedience to his commands; that no aid was to be expected from Spain, if the fort were given up; and that, if he should yield to their request, and bring them to the town, the town itself would then be immediately invested, and they, as well as the rest, soon afterwards reduced to a situation more desperate than that from which they were so solicitous to escape, by deserting an important station which they had undertaken to desend."

V1.

Besides this letter, he sent three commissioners to examine the state of the fortifications; intending by this measure either to gain time, or to prevent 20

fe

fir

an

W

an

tio

ım

OU.

kni

WI

the

dift

the

froi

" S

oth

fort

arri

our

to r

rath

or a

bod

the

with

to v

their

the garrison from finking into despair.

These commissioners differed widely in the accounts which they delivered at their return. Two of them thought it impossible to defend the fort much longer. But the third, named Constantine Castriot, a Greek prince, descended from the famous Albanian hero, Scanderbeg, whether from ignorance, or a consciousness of greater resources in his native courage than the other two possesses in his native courage than the other two possesses in his native courage than the other two possesses in his native courage than the other two possesses in his native courage than the other two possesses in his native courage than the other two possesses in his native courage than the other two possesses how firmly he was persuaded of the truth of what he said, he offered to enter the fort himself, and to undertake the desence of it with such troops as should be willing to accompany him.

The grand-mafter, strongly impressed with a sense of the necessity of protracting the siege, immediately accepted this offer, and bestowed the highest encomiums on Castriot's zeal and resolution. Nor did Castriot find any difficulty in persuading a sufficient number to attend him, who were no less zealous and resolute than himself. The soldiers crowded to his standard, and were emulous to have their names enrolled for that dangerous ser-

vice in which he had engaged.

When La Valette saw the spirit by which these men were animated, and had no longer any doubt of being able, by their means, to prolong the siege of the fort, he sent a letter to the knights,

acquainting them, that he was now willing to give them their discharge; and would immediately fend another garrison, into whose bands, he defired, they should be ready to deliver up the fort, and come themselves to the town in the boats in which their successors were to be transported. "You, my brethren," continued he, "may be in greater fafety here than in your present fituation; and I shall then feel less anxiety for the preservation of the fort, although I think it of fo great importance, that on the preservation of it, that of

our order feems entirely to depend."

to

g

nt

C-

0

rt

e

a-'

m

es

d,

ıg

of

at

to

as

a

m-

he

n.

; a

efs

ers

to

er-

efe

bt

he

ts,

The contents and style of this letter affected the knights in the most sensible manner, and roused within them that delicate sense of honor, by which the order had been fo long and fo eminently distinguished. They trembled at the thoughts of the reception which they were about to meet with from the grand - mafter and the other knights. " Should this new garrison, said they to each other, which is appointed to fucceed us, be fortunate enough to hold out till the Spaniards arrive, in what corner of the earth shall we conceal our infamy?" They resolved without hesitation to remain in the fort till every man should perish, rather than either deliver it to the new garrison, or abandon it to the enemy. And they went in a body to the governor, and entreated him to inform the grand-master of their repentance, and to join with them in praying that they might be fuffered to wipe out the remembrance of their fault by their future conduct. and sources have all believes

BOOK VI. 1565.

BOOK VI.

1565.

The governor readily complied; and, in order to prevent the new garrison from setting out in the night, he dispatched his letter by a noted swimmer before it was dark. La Valette secretly rejoiced at this application; but sent word to the governor, that he must always prefer even a body of new troops to the most experienced warriors, who had resused to submit to the control of military discipline. When this answer was reported to the knights, they were overwhelmed with anguish, and had recourse to the most submissive entreaties of forgiveness. The grand-master suffered himself at last to be overcome; and henceforth the garrison, dismissing all thoughts of their own safety, were intent on nothing but how to prolong the defence.

The grand-master sent them every night fresh troops, to supply the place of the killed and wounded; and kept them well surnished with provisions, ammunition, and fire-works. Of these last he had invented a particular kind, which confisted of hoops of wood, covered with wool, and steeped in boiling oil, and other instammable liquors, mixed with nitre and gunpowder. To these machines they set fire, and threw them staming in the midst of the enemy, when they were crowded together at an assault. It happened often that two or three of the Turks were hooked together and scorched to death; and the utmost confusion was produced wherever the hoops were thrown.

The invincible bravery of the garrison. The belieged flood much in need of this, and every other instrument of mischief, that could be devised for their desence. In spite of the most vigor-

th want

the the int def

as

allo

ftat

up

gar

wa the diff thr the onl

Eve lery bur to

he

er

at

at

ps

ed

ie.

ev

rfe

fs.

be

ng

on

th

nd

ith

efe

n-

nd

li-

efe

in

led

wo

nd

vas

nd

be

or-

ous opposition, the Turks had cast a bridge over the ditch, and begun to sap and undermine the wall. From the 17th of June to the 14th of July, not a single day past without some rencounter; and Mustapha had frequently attempted to scale the wall of the fort, but had been as often repulsed with the loss of some of the bravest of his troops.

Ashamed at having been detained so long before a place of fuch inconfiderable strength, he refolved to make one great decifive effort, and to bring to the affault as many of his forces as the fituation of the place would permit him to employ. He had already made feveral breaches; but in order to fecure the fuccess of the affault which he now intended, he kept his batteries playing all the 15th without intermission, till the wall on that side where he defigned his attack was almost level with the rock. On the 16th the fleet was drawn up before fun-rife as near the fort as the depth of the water would allow; four thousand musketeers and archers were stationed in the trenches; and the rest of the troops, upon a fignal given, advanced to the breach. The garrison was prepared to receive them. The breach was lined with feveral ranks of foldiers, having the knights interspersed among them at certain distances. The Turks attempted often to break through this determined band, and to overpower them with their numbers. But their numbers ferved only to augment the loss which they fustained; Every shot from the fort did execution. The artillery made dreadful havock among them, and the burning hoops were employed with aftonishing

B O O 成 VI. 1565. VI.

1565.

fuccefs. The novelty of these machines, and the shrieks of those who were caught in them, added greatly to the terror which they inspired, and made it impossible for the Turkish officers to keep their men firm and steady in pursuing the advantages which, had they preserved their ranks, their numbers must have infallibly secured.

At length Mustapha, after having continued the affault for more than fix hours, without gaining a fingle inch of ground on the belieged, gave

orders for founding a retreat.

In this attack the garrifon loft about twenty knights and three hundred foldiers; but this lofs was immediately supplied by a reinforcement from the town: and Mustapha was at last convinced, that, unless the communication between the fort and the town were cut off, it would be impossible to bring the fiege of the former to a period, while any troops remained in any other part of the island. By the advice of Dragut he resolved to extend his trenches and batteries, on the fide next to the town, till they should reach to that part of the fea, or great harbour, where those supplies were landed which the grand-mafter daily fent to the garrison. This undertaking, he knew, must be attended with the utmost difficulty, because all the space between his intrenchments and the point to which it was necessary to extend them, lay exposed to the artillery both of fort St. Elmo and St. Angelo. In viewing the ground, a Sangiac, in whom he put confidence, was killed by his fide; and, which was still a more irreparable loss,

in M his wirex the

for

bei Vig the all pul tro tud the was ther in ove ther they one The

ftone fort

othe

then

fafet

he

 \mathbf{d}

nd

to

he

s,

he

ng

ve

ty

fs

m

d,

ort

le

ile

he

to

xt

ITT

es

to

ıſŧ

fe

he

n,

10 ic, 115

ſs,

Dragut received a mortal wound, of which he died BOOK in a few days 2. This did not however discourage Mustapha from pursuing his design. By employing his troops and pioneers at the work day and night without intermission, he at length carried it into execution. Then having planted batteries along the shore, and filled his trenches with musketeers, it was impossible for any boat to pass from the town to the fort, without the most imminent danger of either being funk or intercepted.

After this precaution, he resumed with fresh vigor his attempt to take the fort by storm. On mity. the twenty-first, he made four different assaults; all of which the garrison withstood, and, in repulfing fo many thousand brave and well-disciplined troops, displayed a degree of prowess and fortitude which almost exceeds belief, and is beyond the power of description. But this heroic garrison was now exceedingly reduced in number, and there was the strongest reason to apprehend, that, in one affault more, they must inevitably be overpowered unless a reinforcement were fent them from the town. Of their desperate situation they gave intelligence to the grand-master, by one who fwam accross the harbour in the night. The boats were instantly filled with knights and other foldiers, who generously resolved to devote themselves to certain destruction, for the general fafety, and the preservation of the fort. They set

VI. Dragut killed.

The garrison reduced to

He was wounded in the head by the splinters of a ftone, which was beat to pieces by a cannon - shot from fort St. Angelo.

off from the town with as much alacrity as if they had entertained the most fanguine hopes of VI. 1565. victory; but they found the Turks every where fo much upon their guard, and the lines fo strongly defended, that, after several fruitless attempts to land, they were at last obliged to return, depressed with forrow for the fate of their brave

companions.

The garrison now despairing of relief, gave themselves up for lost; but instead of either capitulating or attempting to escape, they prepared for death, and passed the night in prayer, and in receiving the facrament; after which, they embraced one another tenderly, and then repaired to their respective posts; while such of the wounded as had been disabled from walking, were, at their own earnest desire, carried to the side of the breach, where they waited, without dismay, for the approach of the Turkish army.

St. Elmo taken by affault.

Early in the morning of the twenty-third of July, the Turks advanced to the affault, with loud shouts, as to certain victory, which they believed To small a handful of men as now remained in the fort would not dare to dispute with them. In this expectation they were disappointed. The garrison being resolved on death, and despising danger, were more than men, and exerted a degree of prowels and valor that filled their enemies with amazement. The combat lasted upwards of four hours, till not only every knight, but every foldier had fallen, except two or three who faved themfelves by fwimming. The Turkish colors were

t

tl

0

fo

C

th

fo

of

fre

tit

CO

fui

for

an

the

de

to

wh

int

to

at I

con

paf

the

tead

wit

he l

put

the

1565.

then planted on the ramparts; and the fleet entered BOOK the harbour which the fort commanded in a kind of triumph. When Mustapha took a view of the fort, and expanined its fize and fortifications, he could not refrain from faying, " What will not the father cost us, (meaning the town) when the fon, who is fo fmall, has cost fo many thousands! of our bravest troops." But this reflection, far from exciting his admiration of that heroic fortitude which he had found fo difficult to overcome, ferved only to inspire him with a brutal fury. He ordered all fuch of the garrison as were found lying on the breach alive to be ript open. and their hearts torn out. And as an infult on the knights and their religion, he caused their dead bodies to be fearched for, and large gashes to be made in them, in the form of a cross, after which he tied them on planks, and threw them into the fea, to be carried by the wind and tide to the town, or fort St. Angelo.

The grand-master was at first melted into tears at this shocking spectacle; but his grief was soon converted into indignation and revenge; and thefe passions betrayed him into an action unworthy of the exalted character which he bore. In order to teach the Basha, as he pretended, to make war with less barbarity, he caused all the Turks whom he had taken prisoners to be maffacred; and then putting their heads into his largest cannon, he shot them into the Turkish camp. The mid after.

in the prelections of the fiege, his troops, thenich

VOL. I.

if

of

ere

gly

to

de-

ave

ave

api-

red

lin

em-

to

ded

neir

the

for

of

oud

red

the

his

lon

er,

of

ith

our

lier

m-

ere

i

Eight thousand al list stoy , bedinning visaste

178 HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

BOOK

VI.

In the fiege which has been related, the order lost about one thousand five hundred men, including one hundred and thirty of the bravest knights. The grand-master was deeply affected at so great a loss; but he wisely distembled his concern, and wearing still the same magnanimous and intrepid aspect as before, he inspired all the troops that remained, with a fixed, unalterable resolution, to defend the town and the other forts to the last extremity.

Mustapha vainly imagined, that being intimidated by the fate of their companions, they would be now inclined to liften to terms of capitulation; and in this hope he fent an officer with a white flag to one of the gates, attended by a Christian slave, designed to serve for his interpreter. The Turk was not allowed to enter within the town; but the Christian was admitted, and was led through feveral ranks of foldiers under arms by an officer, who, after showing him all the fortifications of the place, defired him to take particular notice of the depth and breadth of the ditch, and faid to him, " See there, the only fpot we can afford your general; and there we hope foon to bury him and all his Janissaries. "len di . prinspin ad la . i dell an

Siege of Il Borgo and fort St. Michael. This infulting speech being reported by the slave, excited in the fiery mind of the Basha the highest degree of wrath and indignation, and made him resolve to exert himself to the utmost in the prosecution of the siege. His troops, though greatly diminished, were still sufficient to invest at

on He fir lat an wi it

for

rei ca rel die vie th th or

to the La in me

W

of

int by lay

03

rder inveft cted his nous the able forts intithey capiwith y a oretthin and ider all ake the nly ere

the the and oft igh at

iffa-

once both the town and the fort of St. Michael . He kept a constant fire on both; but he intended first to apply himself chiefly to the reduction of the latter, which he proposed to attack both by land and water, at the extremity of the peninfula on which it stands. In order to accomplish this design, it was necessary he should have some shipping introduced into the harbour, for transporting his forces. But the mouth of the harbour having been rendered inaccessible by a great iron chain, and the cannon of St. Angelo, his defign must have been relinquished, if Piali had not suggested an expedient against which the grand-master had not provided. This was to make the Christian slaves and the crews of the ships draw a number of boats, by the strength of their arms, over the neck of land on which stood fort St. Elmo. Of this proposal. which Mustapha immediately adopted, information was carried to the grand - master by a Turkish officer, who, being by birth a Greek, was touched fuddenly with remorfe, and deferted to the Christians. In consequence of this intelligence, La Valette set a great number of hands to work in framing a stacado along that part of the promontory where the Turks intended their attack; and at another part, where the depth of the water

ROOK VI. 1565.

mireviA said St They are situated on two promontories that run out into the great harbour, and are separated from each other by a channel, where the gallies belonging to the Order lay, and the mouth of which was strongly secured on each fide by batteries. Victorial ma derest

^{&#}x27; Called the Spur.

bo

an

by

W

ve

ot

re

att

ha

fin

th

hi

fir

de

m

th

CO

G

fir

di

pr

pu

th

ca

es

m

C be

BOOK VI. 1565.

or the hardness of the bottom would not admit of the stacado, he caused strong intrenchments to be made upon the beach. Mustapha in the mean time fired incessantly upon the fore, while the flaves and crews were employed in transporting the boats over land into the harbour. At length the Basha, judging that the number of boats which he had transported would be sufficient, and that the breaches which his artillery had made were practicable, resolved without further delay to make an attack both by fea and land. He was the more confident of fuecels, as, fince the taking of St. Elmo, he had received a considerable reinforcement, by the arrival of Hascem, son of Barbaroffa, with two thousand five hundred select foldiers, commonly called the bravoes of Algiers. Hascem, who possessed a considerable share of his father's fire, and was ambitious to distinguish himfelf in the Sultan's fervice, begged of Mustapha to intrust him with the affault of fort St. Michael: and vaunted, with his natural arrogance, that he would foon make himself master of it sword in hand. The Basha, whether from an opinion of his valor, or an intention to make him learn at his own expense the folly of his prefumption, readily complied with his request; and having added fix thousand men to his Algerines, he promised to Support him with the rest of his army.

Halcem divided his forces with Candeliffa, an old corfair, his lieutenant; to whom he committed the attack by fea, whilft he referved that on the

Called the Spun.

land to himfelf.

Arrival of Halcem fon of Rarbat of

be

ean

the

ing

gth

oats

and

ade

lay

was

ing

ein-

Bar-

lect

ers. his

imoha

el;

he

in his

his ily

fix

to

an

ed

he

Candeliffa having put his troops on board the boats. fet out with drums beating, and hautboys and other musical instruments playing, preceded by a boat filled with Mahometan priefts, some of whom were employed in offering prayers to Hea- with great ven for his fuccess, or in finging hymns; while others had books in their hands out of which they read imprecations against the Christians. Candelista attempted first to break down the stacado which had been formed to obstruct his landing; but finding it much stronger than he expected, and that, while he was employed in demolishing it. his troops must fuffer greatly from the enemy's fire, he thought it would be easier to make a descent on that part of the shore which the grandmaster had strengthened with intrenchments. At this important post, the Christian troops were commanded by an ancient knight of the name of Guimeran. This experienced officer referved his fire till the Turks had advanced within a little distance of the shore, when by a single discharge he killed about four hundred men. This did not prevent the rest from approaching. Candelissa pushed forwards while the Christians were loading their cannon, and landed at the head of his Al-But Guimeran having referved fome cannon charged with grape-shot, did dreadful execution among them after they had landed, and many of them began to fly to their boats; which Candelissa observing, he commanded the boats to be put off to a little distance from the shore. His troops, perceiving then that they must either die

BOOK VI. 1561. Candeliffa repulfed slaughter.

by

te

til

he

ro

9

po

re

ke

m

te

be

m

th

m

ol

b

m

b

h

th

10

tl

W

al

h

VI.

or conquer, took courage from despair, and advanced boldly to the intrenchment, with ladders for scaling it in one hand, and their sabres in the other. The combatants on both fides displayed the most intrepid valor. Great numbers fell, and the ditch was choaked with blood, and with the bodies of the dead and wounded. The Turks at last, after an engagement of five hours, reached the top of the intrenchment, and there planted their enligns. The knights, stung with shame on account of their retreat, returned with redoubled ardor. But they would probably have been overpowered by the superior number of the enemy, had not the grand-master sent them a seasonable reinforcement, under the admiral de Giou, and the chevalier de Quiney; who fell upon the Algerines and Turks with a degree of fury that struck terror into Candelissa himself, who was noted for his intrepidity. Having ordered the boats to be brought nearer the shore, he was among the first who fled. His bravoes fought desperately for some time after he had left them; but were at length thrown down from the intrenchments, and compelled to fly to their boats with the utmost precipitation. The Christians purfued them, and the batteries continued firing on them without intermission. Many of the boats were funk; the water was covered with dead bodies, mangled limbs, shields and helmets. Of the four thousand who had been fent on this enterprise, scarcely five hundred remained, and many of these were dangerously wounded.

ad-

lers

the

yed

and

the

s at

hed

ted

on

led

ver-

ny,

ble

and

Al-

hat

vas

the

vas

ght

m;

in-

ats

ur-

on

ats

ad

Of his

nd

Hascem was not more fortunate in his assault by land, than Candelissa was by sea. After having been repulfed at one breach with great flaughter, he rallied his troops, and led them on to another, where he fought long and desperately, till most of the bravoes having fallen by his side, he was obliged, with much reluctance and forrow, to found a retreat.

BOOK VI. 1465. Hafcem and

Mustapha, not unmindful of his promise to sup- Mustapha port him, no fooner perceived him beginning to retire, than he ordered the Janisfaries, whom he kept under arms, to advance. The garrison had maintained an engagement with Hascem for five hours, in the middle of the day, and in the hottest season of the year; yet, as if they had not been subject to the wants and weaknesses of humanity, they advanced beyond the breach to meet the Janissaries, and fought apparently with as much vigor and fortitude as before. By the power of superior numbers, they were compelled to fall back within the breach. But there they made the most desperate resistance; and, being reinforced. by de Giou and de Quiney, with the troops which had triumphed over Candelissa, they at last repulsed the Janissaries with dreadful slaughter; after having lost more than forty knights, and two hundred of the bravest of the common men.

Mustapha, enraged by this invincible obstinacy The fiege of which the Christians displayed in their defence, and St. Miand dreading that the Spanish succours, which chael carrihad been already delayed much longer than he en on at the expected, might foon arrive, refolved now to

th

ta

of

th

fo

By

W

br

ga

wl

nis

in

clo

the

an

gre

day

the

COL

the

lon

ren

fon

St.

pro

WO

wh

St.

and

B Q Q K

employ his whole force at once, and while he himfelf profecuted the fiege of fort St. Michael with one half of his troops, to employ the other, under Piali, against the town. More batteries were raised. The trenches were advanced still nearer than before. Bridges of fail-yards and masts were thrown over the ditches. Mines, notwithstanding the hard and rocky foil, were fprung. Affaults were repeated without number; and the two Bashas, emulous of one another, and each of them agitated with continual anxiety lest victory should declare first for his competitor, exhibited the most shining proofs of personal courage, and exhausted all the art of war then known in the world. Yet, through the determined bravery of the knights, conducted by the grand-master with consummate prudence and indefatigable vigilance, the Turks were baffled in every attempt, and repulsed with flaughter. Mustapha flattered himself once with the most fanguine hopes of fuccels on his part, from a machine invented by his principal engineer, in the form of a huge calk bound strongly with iron hoops, and filled with gun-powder, nails, chains, bullets, and fuch other instruments of death. After setting fire to a train which was fastened to this machine, it was thrown by the force of an engine, upon a ravelin that was the principal defence of the fort. But the garrison undismayed, found means, before it caught fire, to cast it out again into the midft of the affailants. In a moment afterwards it burft with dreadful fury, and filled the Turks with consternation. The knights

m-

ith

ler

ed.

be-

wn ard

atous

ith

rft

ng

the gh

ted

nce

led

er. oft

a

in

on

ns, th.

to

an pal

d,

out

noind

hts

the place.

then fallied out upon them fword in hand, and BOOK taking advantage of their confusion, killed many of them, and put the rest to flight.

VI. 1565.

Piali had, on some occasions, still more reason Success of than Mustapha to entertain the hopes of victory, Il Borgo. although the town was much stronger than the fort, and La Valette commanded there in person. By his batteries he had demolished all the outworks of the place, and had made an immense breach in the wall. While his troops were engaged in a furious affault, that engroffed the whole attention of the befieged from morning till night, he employed a great number of pioneers in raising a cavalier or platform of earth and stones, close by the breach, and so high as to overlook the parapet. Night, in the mean time, came on, and prevented him from carrying any further this great advantage; but he doubted not that next day he should be able to make himself master of

As foon as he had drawn off his forces, a The wildom council of the Order was convened, and most of and intrepithe knights were of opinion that the town was no grand-mafter. longer tenable; that the fortifications which still remained should be blown up, and that the garrifon and inhabitants should retire into the castle of St. Angelo. But the grand - master received this propofal with horror and indignation. " This would be in effect, " faid he, " to deliver the whole island into the hands of the infidels. Fort St. Michael, which has been fo gallantly defended and which is preserved by its communication with

a

tl

te

OI

bi

ha

th

ar of

vi

fol

M

ex kn

and

of

it

agi

Sp

fer

Wit

he

exp

avo

VI.

the town, would thus be foon reduced to the necessity of furrendering. There is no room in the castle of St. Angelo for the inhabitants and troops; nor, if there were room, is there water in that fort for fo great a number." It was then proposed that at least the relics of the faints and the ornaments of the churches should be carried into the castle; and the knights earnestly entreated the grand-master to retire into it himself, assuring him that they would conduct the defence with the utmost vigor and vigilance. " No, my brethren," he replied, " what you propose as to the facred things, would ferve only to intimidate the foldiers. We must conceal our apprehensions. It is here we must either die or conquer. And is it possible that I, at the age of seventy-one, can end my life so honorably, as in fighting, together with my friends and brethren, against the implacable enemies of our holy faith?" He then told them what he thought proper to be done, and proceeded instantly to put it in execution. Having called all the foldiers from fort St. Angelo, except a few who were necessary for managing the artillery, he employed them and the inhabitants all night, in throwing up intrenchments within the breach; after which he fent out some of the bravest knights, with a felect body of troops, to make an attempt on the cavalier. These men stole foftly along the foot of the wall till they arrived at the place appointed; when they fet up a loud shout, and attacked the guards whom Piali had left there with so much fury, that the Turks,

believing the whole garrison had fallen upon them, BOOK abandoned their post, and fled precipitately to their camp.

he

in

nd

er

en

nd

ed

ed

ng

ith

th-

he

he

It

it

an

ner

la-

old

nd

ng

ept

til-

all

the

est

ake

ole

red

oud

had

ks,

1565.

The cavalier was immediately fortified, a battery of cannon planted on it, and a parapet raifed on the fide towards the enemy. And thus the breach was rendered impracticable; the town put in greater fecurity than before; and a work, which had been devised for its destruction, converted into a bulwark for its defence.

The grand - master had now greater confidence Ungenerous than ever of being able to hold out till the Spani- conduct of Philip. ards should come to his relief. In consequence Aug. 24. of the affurances given by Philip and the Sicilian viceroy, he had, long before this time, entertained the hopes of their arrival; and had often earnestly folicited the viceroy to hasten his departure from Messina. The conduct of this nobleman was long exceedingly mysterious. The patience of the knights was worn out by his delays; and they, and many others, suspected that the real motive of his conduct was the dread of encountering with an admiral of fo great a reputation as Piali. But it afterwards appeared that the viceroy had acted agreeably to his instructions from the court of Spain. For although Philip was, for the reasons above mentioned, fincerely interested in the prefervation of the knights; and had amused them with the most flattering promises of affistance, yet he seems from the first to have resolved not to expose himself to danger on their account, and to avoid, if possible, a general engagement.

BOOK VI. 1565.

A generous and grateful prince would have acted very differently towards an ally fo deferving of his support; and if either generosity or gratitude had been the leading principle of Philip's conduct, it is probable he would, on this occasion, have regarded the knights as his own fubjects; and have thought it no less incumbent on him to exert himself in their defence, than if they had acknowledged him as their fovereign.

to

ma

pe

kn

vic

in

W

pro

wi

pu

hea

to

ma

rela

for

of

wh

uni

We

I

tha

cor

let

ed

por

he

flee

ftre

him Tub

my

But Philip was affected by their danger only fo far as it threatened the tranquillity of his own dominions. He had refolved to interpole in their behalf, rather than to fuffer them to be overpowered; but he appears to have been very little touched with their calamities; and to have intended to leave them to themselves, as long as there was any profpect of their being able to make refistance; by doing which he confidered, that he would not only preferve his own strength entire, but might afterwards engage with the Turks, when they were exhausted by the operations of the siege.

Philip adhered inflexibly to his plan, notwithstanding the grand-master's repeated importunities, much longer than was confiftent even with his own felfish views. For, without a degree of fortitude and prowess on the part of the garrison, and a degree of wildom, vigilance, and magnanimity, on that of the grand - mafter, infinitely higher than there could be reason to expect, it must have been impossible for such a handful of men to have withstood, for so long a time, so great a force, and fuch mighty efforts as were employed

ve

g

de ıt,

ve

be ert

W-

fo 10-

e-

d;

ed

ve

0by

ot

ht

ey

th-

es,

wn

de la

y,

ier uft

en t a

ed

to reduce them. Even the death of the grand- BOOK mafter alone, whose person was exposed to perpetual danger, would have proved fatal to the knights, long before Philip fent orders to his viceroy to give them any effectual support; and in this case, as his own dominions or his fleet would have been immediately attacked, he would probably have had little reason to be satisfied with the timid, ungenerous counsels which he purfued, we have vicence a factorial we believe

Whatever judgment may be formed on this head, the viceroy did not think himself at liberty to yield to the repeated applications of the grandmafter, till the operations of the fiege began to relax, and the Turkish forces were reduced from forty-five thousand to fifteen or fixteen thousand; of whom many were worn out with the fatigues which they had undergone, and others rendered unfit for action by a bloody flux, which for feveral weeks had raged amongst them.

In this fituation of affairs, when it was probable that the knights would, without affiltance, have compelled the Turks to raife the fiege; the viceroy let the grand-mafter know that he had now received fuch instructions from the king, as put it in his power to show his attachment to the Order; that he was not indeed permitted to attack the Turkish fleet; but that he would immediately bring him a strong body of troops, whose commanders (as he himself must return to Sicily) were to be entirely Subject to the grand-master's authority, till the enemy should be expelled.

VI. 1565. BOOK
VI.
1565.
Arrival of
6000 Spa.
niards.

The viceroy, although still suspected of interposing unnecessary delays, at length sussilled his promise; and on the seventh of September landed six thousand men, under Don Alvaro de Sande and Ascanio de la Corna, in that part of the island which lay at the greatest distance from the Turks; after which he immediately carried back the fleet to Sicily.

de

fo

m

ex

he

de

W

ge

bu

CO

off

ma

tha bit

the

and

WI

Tu of

lat

lab

COL

qui

hac

ato

pro dea

cre

of

The Turkish Bashas had been persuaded by their spies, that the viceroy's intention was to land his troops at the castle of St. Angelo; and to prevent this, Piali had lain several days at anchor before the great port, after having blocked up the entrance into it by a chain of sail-yards, piles and boats.

The fiege raifed, and the departure of the Turks.

In the mean time, intelligence being brought to Mustapha that the Spaniards were landed, and marching towards him, he was thrown into the most dreadful consternation. Sensible that his soldiers were much disheartened by their ill success, he imagined that he was about to be attacked by a superior army, consisting of the bravest and best disciplined troops in Spain. Without waiting for information of their number, he forthwith raised the siege, drew his garrison out of St. Elmo, and leaving all his heavy cannon behind him, embarked his troops with as much precipitation as if the Spaniards with superior forces had been in sight. He had scarcely got on board when a

This is the same nobleman whose valiant defence of the fort of Gerba is described, p. 127.

ter-

his

led e '

and

ks; eet

by

and

re-

be-

the

ght

and

the

fol-

efs,

by

eft

for

fed

ind

m-

as

in

a

of

y.n

deserter arrived from the Spanish camp, and informed him that with sisteen or sixteen thousand men, he had sled before an army that did not exceed six thousand, having no general at their head, and commanded by officers who were independent of one another. The Basha was overwhelmed with shame and vexation by this intelligence, and would have immediately disembarked; but this, he knew, he durst not attempt without consulting Piali, Hascem, and his other principal officers.

While he was deliberating upon it, the grandmaster improved to the best advantage the leisure that was afforded him. He employed all the inhabitants, men, women, and children, as well as the foldiers, in filling up the enemy's trenches, and demolishing their works; and put a garrison without delay into fort St. Elmo; in which the Turks now beheld from their ships the standard of St. John erected where that of Mahomet had lately stood.

This demonstrated to Mustapha how much new labor awaited him in case he should return to the siege; but being enraged against himself on account of the precipitancy of his retreat, and disquieted at the thoughts of the reception which he had reason to expect from Solyman, he wished to atone for his imprudence, and to wipe off the reproach in which it had involved him, by victory or death. Piali, who from his jealousy of the Basha's credit with the Sultan, was not forry for the failure of his enterprise, represented in a council of war

BOOI VI. The Turks

ed,

convened on this occasion, that as the troops were much dispirited and worn out, it would be exposing them to certain destruction, either to lead them against the enemy, or to resume the operations of the fiege. But a majority of the council were of a different opinion; and it was refolved to land the again land- forces again without delay, and to march directly against the Spaniards.

> The Turkish soldiers complained bitterly of this unexpected resolution, and obeyed the orders to disembark with much reluctance. Their officers were obliged to employ threats with fome, and force with others. At length the number intended was put on shore, and Mustapha set out at their

head in fearch of the enemy.

and defeated by the Spamiards.

The grand - master had not neglected to give early notice of their march to the Spanish commanders, who had intrenched their little army on a steep hill, which the Turks would have found almost inacceffible; and it was the opinion of fome of the principal officers, that they should avail themselves of the advantage of their situation, and stand on their defence. But this proposal was rejected with disdain by the bold adventurous De Sande, and the greatest part of the Spanish officers; and the troops were led out of their encampment, to meet the enemy in the open field. This conduct, more fortunate perhaps than prudent, contributed to increase the dejection of the Turkish foldiers, and to facilitate their defeat. Having been dragged against their inclination to the field of battle; and being attacked by the Spaniards with

th

al

tw

pr

Sp

th

th

m

OU

an

aff

ed

on

CO

ev

dil

wl

to

ma

na

ga

the

the

tio

ma

acc

de

great fury, both in front and flank, they fearcely fought; but, being fruck with a fudden panie,

they fled with the utmost precipitation.

rere

ing

em

of

of a

the

ally

of

lers

cers

and

ded

neir

ive

om-

on

bnt

me

vail

and

re-

De

TS;

nt,

on-

on-

rifh

een

of

ith

t

Mustapha, confounded and enraged by this pufillanimous behaviour of his troops, was harried along by the violent tide of the fugitives. He fell twice from his horse, and would have been taken prisoner, if his officers had not rescued him. The Spaniards pursued brifkly till they came to the feashore. There Piali had his boats ready to receive the Turks, and a number of shallops filled with musketeers drawn up to favor their escape. Without this precaution, they must all have perished; and even notwithstanding the protection which it afforded them, the number of their killed amounted to two thousand men, while the victors lost only thirteen or fourteen at most.

Such, after four months continuance, was the Conclusion. conclusion of the siege of Malta, which will be for ever memorable on account of that extraordinary display of the most generous and heroic valor by which the knights, fo few in number, were enabled to baffle the most vigorous effort which could be made to subdue them by the most powerful monarch in the world. The news of their deliverance gave universal joy to the Christian powers; and the name of the grand-master excited every where the highest admiration and applause. Congratulations were fent him from every quarter; and in many States public rejoicings were celebrated on account of his fuccefs. The king of Spain, who derived greater advantage than any other from that

Vol. I.

BOOK VI. 1565.

vi. glorious defence to which La Valette had so highly vi. contributed, sent an ambassador to present him with a sword and dagger of which the hilts were folid gold, adorned with diamonds, as a testimony of his respect; and engaged to pay him annually a sum of money to assist him in repairing his ruined fortifications?

Thuanus, lib. xxxviii. Herrera, historia general. lib. vii. Cabrera, lib. vi. Vertot. Hist. des Cheval. de Malthe.

and an experience of the state of the state

The will give store which the commonwers the

which the course have been shown in the place to the

ครั้ง (ปี) เกิด (ปี) ผู้เป็นสู่เพลา ผู้ และคำ (ปี) เมื่อ (ปี) ผู้เป็นเป็น (ปี) ผู้เป็น (ปี้) ผู้เป็น (ปี)

in this case of the second sec

and we want a classic of the analysis of the properties.

sammayor sa takitang basah na mata bahan da sa na bahas sa katapa yang Masaguda na Karawa sant

notions of a star entropy continue and a serion

the free the free can be the first that the same

and the street and the state of the state of the state of the

This water many court will be a

entitle of the state of the state of the

all the state of t

he to an

m

ce

du ex tal

fh

po

pe

hly nim

ere ony ally

ned

vii.

STO

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAI

BOOK VIL

Mid aware core and about the a

PHILIP, being now delivered from his appre- 100 k hensions of a Turkish invasion, applied with zeal to his favorite objects, the extirpation of herefy, and the enforcing of obedience to the council of of the Ne-Trent. Nor in these points did he meet with therlands, much opposition, in any part of his dominions except the Netherlands; where the feeds of discord, which had been fown in the beginning of his reign. were approaching fast towards maturity. The dutchess of Parma had, soon after his departure. experienced what a difficult charge the had undertaken. The regular clergy still continued to complain as loudly as ever of the new erection of bishoprics; and contributed to the utmost of their power to foment the spirit of discontent among the people. No change, they faid, could be legally

BOOK VII.

made in the constitution of the church, without the confent of the States. The new erections were therefore a violation of a fundamental law; which was the more intolerable as the abbots, on whose ruins the bishoprics were raised, were natives of the country, and deeply interested in the public welfare; whereas the bishops would be entirely devoted to the courts of Rome and Spain. But the regent was obliged to pay a greater regard to the orders of the king, than to the complaints or remonstrances of the people. Nor did she yield to the importunities of any of the cities, into which it had been resolved that the new bishops should be introduced, except Antwerp; the citizens whereof fent deputies to Madrid, and found means to convince Philip, that this new institution, through the dread with which it would inspire foreigners, that the inquisition was about to be established. would prove destructive of their commerce '.

to

E

fe

ir

C

tl

d

While the regent was employed in fettling the new bishops, she was not unmindful of the king's injunctions with respect to the execution of the edicts. They were executed with the utmost rigor, against persons of all ages and of both sexes, without distinction. And no greater regard was shown, on many occasions, to the laws of nature and humanity, than to the constitution of the provinces. The regent was not of herself inclined to those cruel measures that were pursued; but

No change, they talk, could be legally

Meteren , lib. ii. p. 37. Bentivoglio. Grotius , &c.

the

ere

ich

ofe

of

olic

ely

But

to

10

to

ich

uld ere-

to

igh

rs, ed,

the

1g's

the

TI-

es,

was

ure

the

ned

but

the was directed in every thing by Granvelle, BOOK whose views, she knew, were perfectly conformable to those of the king; and whose judgment, for that reason, she often followed in contradiction to her own.

1565.

It was feldom that any matters relative to the edicts or the new bishoprics were laid before the council, and when they were brought thither, they were proposed as points already fixed, and not as subjects on which there was room to deliberate. The regent formed her resolutions privately, with the affistance of Granvelle, and there was nothing left to the council, but to give their fanction to the measures which had been resolved upon be-

It is not furprifing that a conduct fo extremely The nobilipartial should have given umbrage to the other counsellors. The prince of Orange and the counts Egmont and Horn' were more particularly offended with it. Their high stations, their merit and fervices, and the trust which had ever been reposed in them by the late emperor, entitled them to a principal share in the regent's most fecret councils; and they were filled with indignation when they faw that, on every occasion, a preference was given to the cardinal. " In this, " they faid, " confifted the recompence of all their fervices, to be reduced by the king, to whose person and interest they had ever shown the most inviolable attach-

Admirals of the Netherlands.

Now archbishop of Mechlin, and advanced to the dignity of cardinal.

by

di

CC

th

ol

to

CC

ed

ed

no

of

fe

po

pr

to

to

th

th

OL

pr

up

th

pr

de

te

in

di

BOOK VII. ment, under the dominion of an arrogant and haughty ecclesiastic. The dutchess of Parma had the name of regent, but the power was lodged in the hands of Granvelle. The most important affairs of the state were all determined in private by him, without the consent, or even the knowledge of the other counsellors. Their seats in the council, and their government of the provinces, were only high-sounding, empty names, which gave them the appearance of authority, whilst they did not possess any real power; but were equally subjected with others to the arbitrary will of Granvelle."

While the prince of Orange and the other difcontented lords had so much reason to be diffatisfied, it could not be expected that they would be extremely active in executing the orders of the court. Notwithstanding all that had been done to suppress the new opinions in religion, these opinions were diffused wider and wider every day throughout the provinces. This Granvelle ascribed to the negligence of the magistrates in executing the edicts. The prince of Orange, on the other hand, and count Egmont, threw the blame of it on him; and faid, that by pursuing measures to which the people of the Netherlands had never been accustomed, he had soured their minds, and brought the regent's government into hatred and contempt. Those complaints were often made in the presence of the regent herfelf; who, being pressed on the one hand by the politive orders of the king, inculcated by Granvelle, and on the other, distressed

and had

ged

ant

rate

owthe

es, nich

hey

ally

ran-

dif-

atisbe

the e to

ini-

day

bed ing

her

t on nich

acght

npt.

nce the

in-

ffed

by her apprehension of the consequences to be BOOK dreaded from fo much ill-humor and discontent, could only give foothing answers to the complainers, and flatter them with some general hopes that the grounds of their complaints would be removed.

1565.

of Orange proposed in the council, that, in order mostly ato remedy the present evils, she should summon a nat Granconvention of the States. It could not be expect- velle. ed that Granvelle would relish this proposal. For he was not ignorant how ill the people stood affected to his person, and his measures of government; nor how much superior the influence of the prince of Orange would be to his, if the States were affembled. But he did not neglect the present opportunity of ingratiating himself with the king. When the regent gave Philip information of the proposal which had been made to her, and defired to receive his instructions on the subject, Granvelle took that occasion to represent to him, "That nothing could be more prejudicial to his authority than the affembling of the States: a meafure which ought at all times to be avoided, as it usually produced an inclination in the people to encroach upon the prerogatives of the crown; but which there was never fo much ground to dread as at

present, when persons of all conditions were so

deeply infected with a spirit of sedition and discon-

tent. The abbots would come to the convention.

inflamed with indignation on account of the late

diminution of their revenues. The lower nobility

She was still more embarrassed, when the prince Their ani-

¥11, 1565. and the deputies of the towns would be gained over by the prince of Orange, and the other difcontented lords; and the people, ever fond of innovations, would be much more inclined to regard the opinion of their deputies than that of the regent, or the ministers of the king."

This representation was perfectly agreeable to Philip's views and sentiments; nor did he hesitate in complying with the counsel which was offered him. He immediately renewed his orders to the regent with respect to the rigorous execution of the edicts; and thereby let the prince of Orange and the other nobles see that there was nothing farther from his intention than to convene the States, in order to consider of more gentle expedients for preventing the growth of heresy.

to

h

fe

hi

til

fre

m

if

of

be

rel

ot

They apply to Philip for his removal. The persecutions, therefore, were carried on as formerly. The compassion which all men selt for the unhappy sufferers, excited a general odium against the government. The magistrates encountered insurmountable difficulties in executing the orders of the court; and the number of protestants increased daily, while the most vigorous efforts were made to extirpate them by the regent and her ministers. Granvelle endeavoured to convince the king, that this was chiefly owing to the remissions of the governors of the provinces. They were not ignorant of his accusation; and being now incensed against him more than ever, they resolved to make him feel the effects of their resentment. Agreeably to this resolution, the prince of

Bentiveglio, lib. ii. p. 15.

ned

dif-

of

to

of

11 to

tate

red the

the

and

her

in

for

as

for

um

un-

the

ints orts

and

onthe

ney

ing re-

ent-

of

BOOK

VII.

1565.

Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn, wrote a letter to the king, in which they laid the blame of all the disturbances in the Netherlands upon the cardinal; who, they represented, had assumed the fole direction of affairs, and, by his imperious conduct, had rendered himself the object of universal hatred. "It was impossible for them to serve either the king or the people, whilft a person so exceedingly obnoxious possessed such unlimited influence. But the government would proceed smoothly, if Granvelle were removed; and in case the king would grant their request, there should be nothing wanting on their part, either to support his authority, or to maintain the purity of the catholic faith. to which they were not less sincerely attached than cardinal Granvelle."

To this letter Philip, after a delay of some Philip's remonths, made as mild a reply as could justly luctance. have been expected; but he concluded with obferving, "That it was not his practice to dismiss his ministers upon the complaints of their enemies. till he had given them an opportunity of vindicate ing their conduct. Justice too required, that, from general accusations, they should descend to mention particular crimes or misdemeanours; and, if they did not incline to do this in writing, one of them might come to Madrid, where he would be received with every mark of distinction and respect."

With this answer the prince of Orange and the other lords were much diffatisfied; and they had the courage to reply, " That they were greatly

BOOK

VII. 1565.

disappointed to find so little regard paid to their remonstrance. For they had not writ their former letter, as cardinal Granvelle's accusers, but as the king's counfellors; who, by virtue of their office, were bound to inform him of whatever appeared to be of consequence to the welfare of his dominions. They did not defire that the cardinal should suffer harm; and, in any place except the Netherlands, they should be glad to hear of his prosperity; but his continuance there, they thought, was incompatible with the public peace." They added, " That they did not efteem the cardinal fo highly as to undertake a journey to Spain on his account; and that fince the king was pleafed to repofe so little confidence in their opinion, they boped he would dispense with their further attendance in the council; where, as they could not be present without a diminution of their dignity, it was impossible for them, while the cardinal retained his influence, to be of the smallest use."

W

th

de

th

Ju

20

CC

fu

W

en

pu

ab

ou

fu

de

alı

bi

go

ex en

in

ini

fta

gre

To this second letter, Philip made no other answer, but that he would consider of what they had faid, and that in the mean time he expected they would continue to give their assistance as

formerly in the council.

I\$64. Departure of Granvelle.

They now faw that he had no intention to comply with their request. Still however they obeyed his orders, and at times they went to the council; but there, and every where else, they treated the cardinal with fo much ridicule and contempt, that being at length disgusted with his situation, he applied for liberty to retire. The king confented,

cir

ner the

ice,

red

ns. ffer

ds,

but

om-

ed,

hly

acofe

ped

e in

fent

im-

his

ther

hey

Red

as

om

yed

icil; the that

he

ted.

but with great reluctance: and could never for BOOK give the prince of Orange, and the other lords, who had reduced him to this necessity '.

Granvelle's departure was not attended with His measures those advantages which his enemies expected to viglius and derive from it. They had flattered themselves with Barlaimont. the hopes of obtaining, after his removal, their just share in the administration; but Viglius, and count Barlaimont, two zealous catholics, who had concurred with Granvelle in all his arbitrary meafures, were foon received by the regent into the fame degree of favor which he had possessed, and were allowed to exercise the same unlimited influence in the government.

A little before this time the council of Trent had Publication published its decrees, and Philip, as mentioned of the decrees above, had refolved to have them obeyed through- of Trent. out all his dominions. The disturbances which sublisted in the Low Countries, ought to have deterred him from adding fuel to a flame which already burnt with fo much violence. But his bigotry, together with his arbitrary maxims of government, rendered him averse to every mild expedient, and determined him to enforce obedience to the decrees in the Netherlands, as well as in Spain and Italy. When the regent laid his instructions on this head before the council of state, she found the counsellors much divided in

Bentivoglio. Grotius.

Prelident of the privy - council, and esteemed the greatest lawyer in the Netherlands.

u

CI

th

ki

A

fif

pr

vi

be

kn

GC

T

W

im

PI

ed

th

fo

W

EX

an

at

by

an

th

₿00 K VII. 1565.

their opinions. The prince of Orange maintained. " That the regent could not require the people of the Netherlands to receive the decrees, because feveral of them were contrary to the fundamental laws of the constitution. He represented that some catholic princes had thought proper to reject them; and proposed that a remonstrance should be made to the king on the necessity of recalling his instructions." Several other lords were of the fame opinion. But Viglius, on the other hand, urged with great earnestness, the necessity of complying immediately with the king's commands. "By general councils," he faid, " the church had in all ages fecured the purity of its discipline and doctrines. No remedies for the diforders in the Netherlands could be devised more likely to prove effectual, than the decrees in question. If they should be found in any respect incompatible with the laws or privileges of the Netherlands, the inconveniences dreaded from thence might be prevented, by executing them with prudence and moderation. He subjoined, that it was the peculiar glory and happiness of their fovereign, that either he did not entertain the fame erroneous fentiments, or lie under the fame difagreeable necessity as those other catholic princes who had rejected the decrees; but held opinions, and could follow measures, which, while they were conducive to the welfare of the church, were necessary in order to secure the peace and prosperity of his subjects?."

Progress of the

This speech of Viglius had the defired effect

Bentivoglio, lib. ii. p. 22.

ned. ople aufe ental ome em; nade rucion. reat itely ils, the dies dethe any s of rom hem that their the fame prinpinivhile irch.

ffect

and

upon the regent; who immediately refolved, without regard to what had been offered by the prince of Orange, to publish the decrees. But from different causes, both the number and courage of the reformers was now greatly augmented. In confequence of the civil wars in France, many protestants of that kingdom had retired into the fouthern provinces. And through the constant intercourse which subfifted in the way of trade between the more northern provinces and England and Germany, these provinces were filled with protestant ministers, who. being prompted by that ardent zeal which the knowledge of important truth lately discovered is calculated to inspire, exerted themselves with unseafing industry in propagating their religious tenets. The country abounded at the same time with books written against the popish rites and doctrines. Several of the nobility, and many of the magistrates, had imbibed the new opinions. The governors of the provinces were either not inclined to execute those edicts to which they had from the beginning shown themselves averse; or, as they often declared, they found it impracticable to carry them into execution, without laying the country waste, by forcing into exile great numbers of its most industrious inhabitants. In many places the edicts were not executed at all; and in others, the protestants were rescued by the people from the hands of the inquifitors; and the inquifitors themselves obliged to fly from the enraged multitude.

The regent discovered at this time great perplexity Count Egand hesitation. She was exceedingly desirous to have to Spain.

BOOK VII. 1565.

e

fu

n

b

ar

th

fe

la

CO

all

no

O

CO

gi

the

ha

hir

ma

5.5

hir

of

hir

COL

dif

ran

VII. 1565:

BOOK her administration approved by the king, and would have gladly complied with his instructions; but she could not help being alarmed by the repeated reprefentations which were made to her of the confequences that might arise from driving the people to despair. She therefore judged it expedient to fend one of the principal nobility to Spain, to inform the king more fully than the could do by writing; of the real state of the provinces: and having made choice of count Egmont for her ambassador, as one who was equally acceptable to all parties, she employed Viglius the president to give him her instructions, in presence of the other counsellors. The prince of Orange was highly diffatisfied with the terms in which these instructions were expressed: " This representation," said he, " of the state of our affairs, is not calculated to inform the king, but to deceive him. The relation which the prefident has given of our calamities falls infinitely short of the truth. We must lay open from the bottom those wounds under which the country bleeds, elfe the king can never apply the proper cures. Let us not, by our mifrepresentations, make him believe the number of heretics to be smaller than it is. Let us acquaint him, that every province, every town, every village is full of them. Let us not conceal from him how much they despise the edicts, and how little they respect the magistrates; that he may see how impracticable it is to introduce the inquifition, and be convinced that the remedy which he would have us to apply, would be infinitely worfe than the disease." He added, " That although he was a

ould

fhe

pre-

nfe-

e to

end

the

the

oice

who

yed

ons,

e of

s in

s re-

airs,

eive

iven

uth.

inds

can

our

nber

aint

Vil-

him

ittle

how

and

nave

the

as a

true catholic, and a faithful subject of the king; yet he thought the calamities which had been lately experienced in France and Germany, afforded a fufficient proof that the consciences of men were not to be compelled, and that herefy was not to be extirpated by fire and fword, but by reasoning and persuasion; to which it was in vain to expect that men would be brought to liften, until the prefent practice of butchering them like beafts was laid aside." He represented likewise the absurdity of publishing, on this occasion, the decrees of the council of Trent, and proposed that count Egmont should be instructed to request the king to suspend the publication of them till the present tumults were allayed. But the regent was either not inclined or not at liberty to follow the opinion of the prince of Orange in preference to that of Viglius. She called count Egmont apart from the council, and having given him fuch instructions as she thought proper, the made him fet out immediately for Spain; after having flattered him with hopes that his journey thither, if he improved the opportunity afforded him, would fecure him the full possession of his master's favor .

The king received him at Madrid, and entertained him, during his stay there, with every testimony of regard. When he was about to return, he made him a present of fifty thousand florins; and, as the count had several daughters, Philip promised to dispose of them in marriages suitable to their father's rank. The cotemporary historians differ widely in

Bentivoglio, lib. ii. Grotius, lib. i.

B O O K VII. 15651

His reception there.

VII. 1965. His return. their relations of what passed with respect to the subject of his embassy. The most probable account is, that although Philip's answer was not clear and explicit, yet that he expressed himself with fo much foftness in speaking of the edicts, and uttered fo many strong professions of affection for the people of the Netherlands, that the count, who was in the highest degree candid and sincere, was induced to believe that the king did in reality intend to alter his measures of government. It is certain', that he returned to the Low Countries highly satisfied with the court of Spain; and extolled the goodness of the king, and the love which he bore to his Flemish subjects. The prince of Orange was not fo eafily deceived. Count Egmont had been imposed upon, he faid, by Spanish artifice. His private interest had blinded his penetration, and created in him an ill-grounded fecurity with regard to the public good ".

In confequence of his report, a conference appointed.

But although count Egmont was not able to fatisfy the prince of Orange, it should seem that his report was credited by most of the other countellors, and even by the regent herself; who would not otherwise have agreed to a measure which, immediately after the count's arrival, was suggested in the council. It was there proposed that a certain number of divines and lawyers should meet together in Brussels, to consider of the most effectual methods of putting a stop to the growth of heresy; and the regent readily consented to this

proposal,

pr

to

bil

an

pr

an

M

for

lic

tha

the

tic

TO

be

acc

pri

ing

for

jeć

he

wl

br

OC

arı

mi

cit

he

an

Grotius. 2º Vid. William's Apology, p. 485.

o the

count

clear

with

and

n for

unt,

cere,

ality

It is

ntries

d ex-

love

rince

mont

ifice.

and

gard

le to

count

ould

nich,

efted

cer-

meet

effec-

h of

this

1

1.

proposal, without inquiring, as she used to do BOOK on other occasions, whether it would be agreeable to the king. To this conference she called the bishops of Arras, Ipres, and Namur; Ravenstenius and Jansenius, two eminent divines; the two presidents of the provincial councils of Flanders and Utrecht, and two eminent lawyers from Mechlin and Brabant.

The refult of their deliberations was, that schools for instructing youth in the principles of the catholic faith, should be erected in all the provinces; that particular attention should be given to reform the lives of the clergy; and that in punishing heretics mild chastisements should be adopted, in the room of those severe ones, which upon trial had been found so ineffectual ".

The regent having transmitted to the king an Philipoffends account of these determinations, was greatly fur- ed mich it. prifed when she was informed, that far from approving them, he was extremely diffatisfied with her for allowing the conference to be held. The fubjects which had been considered in it, were points, he faid, already fixed by his authority; and which, on that account, ought not to have been brought under deliberation. The diforders which occasioned so much uneasiness to the regent, had arisen from the connivance or negligence of her ministers. But if any of them were found wanting, either in courage or in zeal for the service which he required, she must immediately dismiss them. and substitute others in their place; for no fervice

VII.

1565.

Bentivoglio, lib. ii. p. 25. VOL. I.

C

n

te

to

n

to

th

V

W

66

de

di

m

p

b

15

fp

fe

th

fi

fr

which she could perform, would be either so vii. acceptable to him, or so conducive to his glory and interest, as the extinction of heresy in the Netherlands.

The perfecu-

The regent had, from the beginning of her administration, been extremely solicitous to gratify the court of Spain. Nothing could have made her agree to the conference, but her conviction, sounded on count Egmont's report, that it would not be unacceptable to the king. As soon as she discovered her mistake, she published an edict, confirming all the former edicts, and requiring the governors and councils to proceed in the execution of them with the utmost diligence 13.

Even Viglius" hesitated as to the expediency of this measure at the present juncture; and it excited in the minds of the people universal indignation and association. Those hopes of deliverance from their grievances, which they had conceived from count Egmont's journey to Spain, had, by his report of the king's disposition towards them, been raised to the greatest height. Their disappointment now was proportionably great. They did not blame count Egmont; for they were persuaded that he had been deceived; but they detested the duplicity and artisice of Philip and his ministers.

The count had too much fensibility not to be deeply affected on this occasion; and he

Meursius Gul, Auriac. p. 4, 5.

Ibid.

complained bitterly that the king had acted with BOOK no other defign in the studied kindness which he had shown him, but to expose him to the contempt or hatred of his countrymen, and thereby

1565.

to ruin his credit and influence ".

r fo

clory

the

her

gra-

nade ion,

ould

fhe fhe

dict,

iring

the

ency

d it

erfal

s of

they

y to

tion

ght.

ably

for

ved:

e of

t to

he

The prince of Orange was almost the only The prince of person in whom this unexpected measure created Orange reno furprise. When the new edict was transmitted to him, he wrote to the regent a letter; in which he represented, " That in the present temper of the people, it was impossible for the king's fervants to execute the orders imposed upon them. without involving the provinces in a civil war." "But if still," he added, "your highness be determined to have the edicts carried into immediate execution, then I must defire that some more proper person may be appointed in my place, who, possessing greater authority, may be better qualified to fulfil your intention. The king is not ignorant, that on other occasions I have spared neither my person nor my fortune in his fervice. My prefent conduct proceeds not from the want of loyalty or zeal, but from a persuafion that I cannot yield the obedience required from me, without dishonor to myself, and infinite prejudice to the Netherlands ".

Neither the prince of Orange, nor the counts Egmont and Horn, expressed their distatisfaction with the present measures of government in any

[&]quot; Strada , lib. iv. p. 118.

[&]quot; Gen. Hift. of the Netherlands.

BOOK VII. 1665.

other way than by making remonstrances and complaints. As it was greatly their interest, so it appears to have been their fincere defire, to avoid incurring the king's displeasure. And they studied to give him every proof of fidelity that could be reasonably expected from those who were members of a free state, and had sworn to maintain the fundamental laws of the constitution.

The compro-

The conduct of many of the other nobles was not fo scrupulous and reserved. They set on foot, at this time, a confederacy, by which they bound themselves to support one another, in preventing the inquisition from being established St Aldegonde in the Netherlands. The prime mover of this expedient was Philip de Marnix, lord of St. Aldegonde, a nobleman highly distinguished for his eloquence, his address, and his political abilities, who had the merit of contributing more than any other person (the prince of Orange alone excepted) towards accomplishing that happy revolution, by which the northern provinces were rescued from the Spanish yoke. By his advice, and according to his direction, a writing was drawn up, termed the Compromise, which is here inferted, as it marks strongly the spirit by which the people of the Netherlands were animated.

> " Whereas certain malicious persons, under the cloak of zeal for the catholic religion, but in reality prompted by ambition, pride, and avarice, have, by their misrepresentations, persuaded our lord the king to introduce into these provinces that

1566.

vi fee w fic

m

is

la

in

h

th

P

VI

to

cl

ac

bi

de

er

of

fo

fc

of

th

W

of

an eis fix

are

and

o it

oid lied

be

em-

tain

was

on rich

er,

hed

this

lde-

his

ties.

han

one

re-

rere

ice,

was

is

pirit

rere

the

lity

ve.

ord

hat

most pernicious tribunal the inquisition; which BOOK is not only contrary to all human and divine laws, but exceeds in cruelty the most barbarous institutions of the most favage tyrants in the heathen world; which subjects all authority to that of the inquisitors, reduces all men to a perpetual state of miserable slavery, and by the visitations which it appoints, exposes the best men to continual apprehensions; so that if a priest, a Spaniard, or wicked minion of power shall incline, he may, by means of this institution, accuse any man, however innocent, and cause him to be imprisoned, condemned, and put to death, without being confronted with his accufers, and without being allowed to bring evidence of his innocence, or to speak in his defence: for these reasons we whose names are here subscribed have resolved to provide for the security of our families, goods, and persons; and for this purpose we hereby enter into a facred league with one another, promising with a folemn oath, to oppose, with all our power, the introduction of the above mentioned inquifition into these provinces; whether it shall be attempted openly or fecretly, and by whatever name it shall be called, whether that of Inquisition, Visitation, Commisfion, or Edict: declaring at the same time, that we are far from entertaining the defign of attempting any thing prejudicial to the interest of our fovereign the king; but on the contrary, that our fixed intention is, to support and defend his government, to maintain peace, and to prevent, to

VII. 1566.

P 3

the utmost of our power, all seditions, tumults, and revolts. This agreement we have sworn; and we hereby promise and swear to maintain it for ever facred; and we call Almighty God to witness, that neither in word nor deed shall we ever weaken or counteract it.

W

21

p

tl

al

h

tl

fe

C

to

e

e:

ti

"We likewise promise and swear, mutually to defend one another, in all places, and on all occasions, against every attack that shall be made. or persecution that shall be raised, against any individual amongst us, on account of his concern in this confederacy. And we declare, that no pretence of the perfecutors, who may alledge rebellion, infurrection, or any other plea, shall exempt us from this our oath and promife. No action can deserve the name of rebellion, that proceeds from opposition to the iniquitous decrees of the inquisition; and therefore whether any of us be attacked directly on account of opposing these decrees, or under pretence of punishing rebellion or insurrection, we hereby fwear to endeavour by all lawful means to procure his deliverance.

"In this and every part of our conduct regarding the inquisition, our meaning is, to submit to the general opinion of our confederates, or to that of those who shall be appointed by the rest

to affift us with their counsel.

"In witness of this our league, we invoke the holy name of the living God, as the searcher of our hearts; humbly beseeching him to grant us the grace of his holy spirit, that all our enterprises may be attended with success, may promote the

Its,

rn:

n it

to

we

ally

all

ide.

any

erm

ore-

on,

us

can

om

ifi-

ced

or

ec-

ful

rd-

to

to

eft

he

of

he

es he

honor of his name, contribute to the welfare of BOOK our fouls, and advance the peace and true interest of the Netherlands."

1565.

Such were the terms of the compromise, which was quickly circulated through the provinces, and fubscribed by persons of all ranks, whether catholics or protestants. Books were at the same time multiplied, in which liberty of confcience was pleaded, the absurdities in the popish doctrines and worship exposed, and hideous pictures drawn of the inquisition.

The regent felt great anxiety with regard to the confequences with which fo much ill-humor and discontent were likely to be attended. She had never fully credited the reprefentations which the prince of Orange and some of her other counfellors had often made to her. And the now complained bitterly of the fituation to which she was reduced by the orders fent from Spain. "For to what purpose was it (she faid) to publish edicts, when I wanted power to enforce their execution? They have ferved only to increase the people's audacity, and to bring my authority into contempt 16.

The prince of Orange, and the counts Horn speech of and Egmont, had, ever fince the last republica- the prince of Orange in the tion of the edicts, absented themselves from the council. council. The regent now wrote to them in the most urgent manner, requiring their attendance. They readily complied; and the regent, after

Bentivoglio and Strada.

216 HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

1

f

fe

16

f

h

0

C

iı

tl

t

ti

f

BOOK having informed them of her defign in calling vii. them together, defired they would deliver their opinions without referve. The prince of Orange was among the last who rose, and he spoke as follows 17.

"Would to Heaven I had been so fortunate as to gain belief, when I ventured to foretel what has now happened. Desperate remedies would not in that case have been first applied, nor persons who had fallen into error been confirmed in it, by the means employed to reclaim them. We should not certainly think savorably of a physician's prudence, who, in the beginning of a disease, when gentle remedies were likely to prove effectual, should propose the burning or cutting off the part insected.

"There are two species of inquisition. The one is exercised in the name of the pope, and the other has been long practised by the bishops. To the latter, men are in some measure reconciled by the power of custom; and considering how well we are now provided with bishops in all the provinces, it may be reasonably expected that this sort will alone be sound sufficient. The sormer has been, and will for ever be, an object of abhorrence, and ought to be abolished without delay.

"With respect to those edicts which have been so often published against the innovators in religion,

10 th

This speech is recorded by Nicholas Burgundius, who compiled his history from the papers of the president Viglius. Vide Brandt's history of the reformation in the Netherlands.

hearken not to me, but to your own experience. which will inform you, that the perfecutions to which they have given rife, have ferved only to increase and propagate the errors against which they have been exercifed. The Netherlands have for feveral years been a school, in which, if we have not been extremely inattentive, we may have learned the folly of perfecution. Men do not for nothing forego the advantages of life; much less do they expose themselves to torture and death for nothing. The contempt of death and pain, exhibited by heretics in fuffering for their religion. is calculated to produce the most powerful effects on the minds of spectators. It works on their compassion, it excites their admiration of the sufferers, and creates in them a suspicion, that truth must certainly be found where they observe so much constancy and fortitude. Heretics have been treated with the same severity in France and England as in the Low Countries. But has it been attended there with better success? On the contrary, is there not reason, there as well as here, to say what was faid of the Christians of old. That the blood of the martyrs is the feed of the church. The emperor Julian, the most formidable enemy whom Christianity ever saw, was fully sensible of the truth of this. Harassing and tormenting could only ferve, he knew, to inflame that ardent zeal which he wanted to extinguish. He had recourse therefore to the expedient of ridicule and contempt; and this he found to be more effectual. The Grecian empire was at different periods infected with herefies

B O O K VII. 1565.

heir inge e as

ling

retel dies ied, con-aim y of to

The the To by well prothis has horay.

who lius.

een

VII.

of various kinds. Ætius taught errors in the reign of Constance; Nestorius in that of Theodosius; Arius in that of Constantine. No such punishments were inflicted, either on the herestarchs themselves or on their disciples, as are now practifed in the Netherlands; and yet where are all those false opinions now, which the first broachers were at fo much pains to propagate? Such is the nature of herely, if it rests, it rusts; but he who rubs it. whets it. Let it be neglected and overlooked, it will foon lofe the charm of novelty; and with that, it will lose the greatest part of its attractive power. But they are not the examples only of heathen princes which I would recommend to the regent's imitation. In complying with my advice, fhe will tread in the steps of our late glorious emperor, her father; who from experience was convinced, that gentle measures were more likely to prove effectual than fevere ones; and therefore adopted the former, in preference to the latter, for several years before his refignation.

in

W

CC

fo

la

be

fo

he

ac

du

th

ce

for

W

the

the

int

we

"The king himself appeared, at a certain period, inclined to make trial of mild expedients. But, through the influence of the bishops and other ecclesiastics, he has changed his views. Let these men answer for their conduct if they can. For my own part, I am entirely satisfied that it is impossible to root out the present evils in the Netherlands by force, without shaking the state from its soundation. I conclude with reminding you of what we have all heard frequently, That the protestants in the Low Countries have opened a correspondence

ign

us;

nts

ves

the

alfe

at

ure

it, , it

rith tive

of

the

ice,

ous

was

ely

ore

ter,

iod,

ut,

her

nese

my

offi-

nds

ida-

we s in

nce

with those in France. Let us beware of irritating BOOK them more than we have already done, lest, by imitating the French catholics in their feverity, we, like them, involve our country in the dreadful miseries of a civil war."

This speech was not entirely without effect. It convinced the regent, that she must either make fome concessions to the confederates, or have recourse to arms. She was inclined to follow the latter of these measures, because she knew it would be more agreeable to the king; and she defired count Egmont to undertake the command of some forces which the proposed to raise, in order to carry her defign into execution; but the count declined accepting of it, faying, That he could not fight with honor in defence of the inquisition. The dutchess found it necessary, therefore, to embrace the other alternative, and to attempt to footh the malecontents, by making some abatement in the rigor of the edicts".

Meanwhile the number of those who had acceded to the compromise was become so considerable, that they thought it was now time to take fome step towards fulfilling their engagements. With this view they fet out for Bruffels, where the court refided, and fent some of their number to defire leave of the regent, to lay before her their fentiments concerning a subject in which the interest of the king and their personal security were equally concerned. The counfellors were

VII.

1566.

¹⁸ Brandt, vol. i. p. 165.

B O O K VII. 1566. divided in their opinions with regard to the answer proper to be made to this request. Some of them were for rejecting it utterly; others advised to admit two or three of the confederates and no more; but the opinion of those prevailed who thought that, at present, it would be imprudent to furnish them with any just ground of offence, by denying them a privilege to which every inhabitant of the Netherlands was entitled; especially as they were without arms, and no danger could be apprehended from admitting them.

CO

int

fol

fer

th

OI

ha

to

ha

to

re

W

2 5

de

to

of

er hi

th

m

y

lo

in

fc

t

f

They entered Bruffels in the beginning of April one thousand five hundred and fixty-fix, in number between three and four hundred, on horseback. Besides count Brederode, who was descended from the ancient earls of Holland, there were the counts Colemberg and Tresemberg, the marquis of Mons, the baron of Montigny, and count Lewis of Nassau, brother to the prince of Orange; all of them persons of considerable influence in the

provinces.

They went in a body, walking two by two, from the house of count Colemberg to the palace, and were received there by the regent, attended

by the council of state.

Petition of the nobles.

They began their petition with declaring, "That as hitherto they had never failed in loyalty to the king, so they were still as much as ever determined to hold fast their allegiance. They were sensible that their present conduct might be misconstrued; but they chose rather to expose themselves to this risk, than not inform the regent of what they were

fwer

hem

d to

l no

who

dent

nce,

nha-

ially

ould

April

um-

ack.

aded

the

quis

ount

nge;

the

wo,

lace,

nded

Fhat

the

ined

fible

ied;

this

were

BOOK

VII.

1566.

convinced was of the highest consequence to the interest both of the king and the provinces. The folicitude which the king had discovered to preferve religion pure in the Netherlands, deserved the highest praise; but experience had shown, that the remedies employed for this purpose contributed only to increase the disease. They had long flattered themselves with hopes, that the States would have been affembled, to devife means more likely to prove fuccessful; but fince this defirable event had not taken place, they thought it their duty to inform her, that if the measures of government respecting religion were not quickly altered, they were persuaded it would be impossible to prevent a general infurrection. It was therefore their earnest defire, that she would fent some proper persons to the king, to acquaint him with the necessity of foftening the rigor of the edicts; and they entreated her to suspend the execution of them till his pleasure should be known. But if no regard. they added, shall be paid to this our humble and most earnest prayer, we call God and the king, your highness, and these your illustrious counsellors, to witness, that we have given warning of the impending danger, and shall not be accountable

for the calamities that may enfue ". To this petition the regent gave the following Answer of answer in writing: "That she was not invested by the regent. the king with power to fuspend the execution of the edicts; but that she was not averse from sending some proper person to Spain, where she would

Bentivoglio and Brandt.

BOOK VII. 156G.

willingly employ her good offices to procure them fatisfaction. That, in the mean time, she would iffue orders to the inquisitors to proceed in the exercise of their office with moderation; and that, in return for her concessions, she expected that the petitioners would study carefully to avoid all occasion of offence."

t

fi

i

d

fe

n a

tl

to

I

Te th

to

tl

to

tı

to

li

n

e

The confederates, much diffatisfied with this answer, insisted earnestly upon receiving one that was more explicit; and the regent, dreading the confequences of fending them away in ill-humor, ordered her fecretary to communicate to them the instructions which, after considering the matter more maturely, she had resolved to transmit to the inquisitors. These were, that henceforth they should proceed against offenders in the article of religion with the utmost gentleness; and should not punish any of them with banishment, impriment, or confiscation, unless they were found guilty of feditious practices. And these instructions, it was added, were to remain in force till the king's pleasure should be known. The confederates, on the other hand, engaged, not to attempt to make any innovation in religious matters, but to wait patiently for the determination of the affembly of the States; which they fondly flattered themselves would be held soon, in order to put an end to all their grievances.

The marquis of Mons and the baron of Montigny

Agreeably to her first declarations, the regent immediately dispatched the marquis of Mons and the baron of Montigny, to lay the petition before Sent to Spain. the king. And these two noblemen gladly undertook

the talk affigned them; little suspecting either how fruitless their journey was to prove, as to the intention of it, or how fatal to themselves. For, as will appear in the fequel, Philip did not confider them as the regent's ambassadors, but as perfons who had brought her under the difagreeable necessity of clothing them with that character, and as the heads of a confederacy which had been formed against his government.

them

ould

i the

and

ected

void

this

that

the

mor,

n the

atter

it to

they

le of

iould

mpri-

ound

ions,

l the

eder-

empt

but

the

tered

put

gent

and

efore

took

In the mean time a report was propagated in The intempethe Netherlands, that the regent had confented the reformers. to the public profession of the reformed religion. In the belief of this, the people threw off the referve which they had hitherto maintained, and the protestant ministers preached in many places to numerous affemblies of persons, who came together in arms, with a refolution to defend themselves, in case the inquisitors should attempt to interrupt them. From these assemblies they soon passed to open violence against the churches, and despoiled them of all their costly ornaments.

These outrages were first committed in the province of Flanders; and the example of the Flemings was quickly diffused throughout all the provinces. In a little time afterwards the fame tumultuous spirit appeared in the great commercial towns; in which, from their frequent intercourfe with foreign protestants, and from the spirit of liberty that naturally grows up in large communities, almost the whole body of the people had

embraced the new opinions.

In Antwerp the reformers indulged themselves

BOOK VII. 1566.

BOOK VII. 1566.

in the most unjustifiable extravagancies. They infulted the catholics when employed in the functions of their religion. They broke furiously into the great church, which was one of the richest edifices in Europe, overturned the altars. defaced the paintings, and destroyed all the images of the faints.

From the cathedral they flew with the same ungovernable fury to the monasteries and convents; and there, after forcing open the gates, and obliging the monks and nuns to fly into the city for shelter, it appeared that, under the cover of religious zeal, many of the most abandoned of the geople had joined with the reformers, and embraced the prefent opportunity of gratifying their rapacity. The fame riotous spirit appeared in numberless other places. It spread like a conflagration over all the provinces; meeting every where with the same combustible materials, and every where producing the same pernicious effects.

In Bruffels they were overawed by the prefence of the court: yet even there, they had, in some measure, thrown off their wonted reserve; and the regent, apprehensive that her person was in danger, refolved to refide in Mons. This resolution gave much uneasiness to the prince of Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn; who faw how much dishonor it would reflect on them. to have it believed that the person of the princels was infecure, where they were invested with fuch high command, and possessed such extensive influence.

ir

tl

fa

ir

0

e

fe

th

no

ac

re

TIC fe

ch

re

an

en th

W

to

an

ers

They

oufly

the

tars . the

fame con-

ates.

the over

oned

and

ying

eared

con-

very

and

s ef-

pre-

, in

rve;

erfon

This

e of

who

nem,

prinwith

five

e.

the

They employed every argument BOOK influence. that could prevail upon her to alter her intention. They pledged their lives and fortunes for her fafety; and promifed to exert their utmost power in quelling those disorders which were the cause of her inquietude. At length she vielded to their entreaties, and confented still to remain at Brusfels ".

VII. 1566.

The feveral governors foon after fet out for The fucced their respective provinces. The prince of Orange, the prince besides being governor of Holland, Zealand, of Orange Utrecht, and Burgundy, was viscount and gover- in quelling nor of Antwerp. And even the popish historians acknowledge, that, having often gone thither, he had exerted himself strenuously in quieting the tumults occasioned by the intemperate zeal of the reformers. At this time he ordered three of the August. rioters to be executed, and fined and banished several of the rest. He again opened the great church, and restored the exercise of the catholic religion.

and zeal of

But finding it impossible to prevent the protestants from holding their religious meetings, he

entered into an agreement with the persons of the greatest influence among them; by which they were allowed to exercise their religion in churches within the city, provided that they should come together without arms; that they should give no

annoyance to the catholics; and that their preachers should refrain from all invectives against the

Bentivoglio, Brandt, &c. VOL. I.

ca

up

an

ne

pl

to

m

pe

th

ge

bl

to

tic

ha

ec

ki

Ti

H

th

al

n

tl

800 k established church. And he consented that this vii. agreement should remain in force till he should know the pleasure of the king; to whom the protestants engaged to submit, or immediately to leave the Netherlands.

The regent approved of every part of William's conduct on this occasion, except his allowing the reformers to hold their meetings within the town In order to fatisfy her on this head, he represented, that he had granted them this indulgence from a conviction which experience had already confirmed, that by means of it he could more eafily prevent the pernicious effects of their extravagance; that when they were under his own eye, or that of the magistrates, their assemblies were not near fo numerous as formerly; their preachers were not fo apt to indulge their enthuliasm, or to use indecent freedoms with the government; nor the people so apt to be inflamed, as when they affembled without restraint in the open fields. This measure, he added, was not only expedient, but necessary. There was no room for authority or persuasion. The reformers had shown themselves unalterably determined to fet up their worship within the city, whether he had permitted them or not. Their affemblies in the country had generally amounted to twenty-four or twenty-five thousand. Even in the town they were feldom less than ten thousand. He had no army to reduce fo great a number to obedience; and not a fingle person among the

catholic inhabitants could be perfuaded to take BOOK up arms against them ".

at this

should

e pro-

ly to

lliam's

ig the

town

efent-

from

con-

eafily

ance;

that

near

e not

inde-

eople abled

fure,

Mary.

fion.

ably

city.

heir

nted

n in

and.

r to

the

VII. 1566.

After quieting the disturbances in Antwerp, the prince fet out for the provinces of Holland and Zealand, where his presence was equally necessary. There too, as in Antwerp, he employed all his power and influence; and did more towards quelling the tumultuous spirit of the reformers, than any other person could have done, without an armed force to overawe them. He perfuaded them to restore the churches which they had usurped; and, except in one or two places, they were fatisfied with the liberty which the regent was willing to allow, of holding their affemblies for religious worship in the suburbs of the town, or in the country.

Count Egmont was no less active in his depart- Count Eg. ment. From natural temper, as well as from poli- mont's fuctical principles, no man was more averse to harshness and severity; yet being strongly prompted on this occasion by his desire of gratifying the king, he was at the utmost pains to discover the rioters, and punished many of them with rigor. He restored the priests to their functions, opened the churches which had been shut, and reduced all the protestants within his government to the necessity of acquiescing in the conditions which

the regent had prescribed.

Count Horn likewise acted with uncommon Count Horn's spirit and vigor in the city of Tournay, where

Brandt. Van Meteren, lib. if.

fo

ur

th

ha

fre

inc

the

tio

ha

be

of

rep

pri

ex

Vig

ene

put

the

wh

hac

wo

aga

fou

the

had

nati

mal pre

his

the

gen

228

BOOK VII. 2566.

the disorders had risen to a greater height than in other places. The inhabitants of that city, to the number of fix thousand, having taken arms, laid fiege to the garrison. They soon reduced it to fuch extremity, as obliged the commander to inform the regent, that if she did not send him immediate relief, he could not hold out longer than one day. She had not troops sufficient to oppose fo great a force; nor was there any other expedient in her power, by which the could preferve the garrison from surrendering, but that of sending count Horn, their governor's " brother, to intercede with the inhabitants. The count forced his way, at the hazard of his life, into the midst of them; and with great address persuaded them not only to defift from the blockade, but to lay down their arms, to yield up the churches which they had usurped, and to rest satisfied with certain places of worship which he had affigned them without the city 23.

Philip's aversion to thefe noblemen.

· wax

Grounds of From this representation of the conduct of the prince of Orange and the counts Horn and Egmont, they had very little reason, it should seem, to dread the king's displeasure. For they were not less active, nor less successful than the other governors 20, with whom Philip is faid to have been entirely fatisfied. But the disapprobation which they had discovered of his measures of government

The Baron de Montigny, at this time in Spain.

Brandt, Meteren, etc. 24 The counts Aremberg and Megen.

an in o the

laid

it to

o in-

im-

than

pose

xpe-

e the

ding

nter-

d his

ft of

not

own

they

rtain

hem

the

Eg-

em,

vere

ther

ave

hich

ent

fome years before; the objections which they had ROOK urged against his retaining the Spanish forces in the Low Countries; the necessity to which they had reduced him, of removing Granvelle; their frequent remonstrances in the council against the inquifition and edicts; and the attachment which they had ever shown to the liberty and constitutional privileges of the provinces; all thefe causes had alienated him entirely from them, and had begotten in his dark revengeful mind, a degree of hatred and refentment, which neither time, repentance, nor faithful services, could erase.

These noblemen had been disappointed of the private, as well as public advantages which they expected to derive from the removal of Granvelle. Viglius and count Barlaimont were equally their enemies as the cardinal, and equally disposed to put malicious interpretations on their conduct. In these they were powerfully seconded by Granvelle; who, some time after his leaving the Netherlands, had been called to Madrid, where he enjoyed his wonted influence. This he did not fail to employ against his enemies in the Netherlands; and he found it easy to perfuade the king, that in fecret they had been abettors of all the disturbances which had arisen. Philip was therefore fired with indignation against them, and resolved sooner or later to make them feel the weight of his refentment. At present, however, he thought it necessary to conceal his fentiments, and in his answer to the account of the late transactions transmitted to him by the regent, he expressed his gratitude for the zeal that

VII. 1565.

VII. 1566.

BOOK had been discovered in his service, and exhorted her, and the governors of the provinces, to continue their endeavours to allay the tumults in the best manner which the present circumstances would permit.

10

to

0

le

al

di

th

CC re

en W

0

to

en

fic

P

hi

th

Forces levi-24

With this answer he fent money, and an order for raifing a body of catholie troops, upon whose fidelity he could depend for an absolute compliance with his will.

The regent was not remifs in executing this order. She immediately levied a body of cavalry, and five regiments of infantry; of which the gave the command to the counts Erbestein, Charles of Mansfeld, Reuls, baron Schomberg, and the Sieur de Hierges, fon of count Barlaimont.

The prince of Orange and the counts Horn and Egmont could easily discern the design of this armament; and they declared their difapprobation of it in the council, as a measure calculated to rekindle the flames of discord and fedition.

Difcovery of Philip's

delign.

They were at the fame time informed by letters from the marquis of Mons, and the baron of Montigny, that whatever public answer had been fent from the court of Spain to the dutchess of Parma, it was known to every person at Madrid, that the king was highly offended at the concelfions which they had made lately to the protestants. That they were confidered as fomenters of the tumults, and encouragers of herefy. That the king and his ministers talked now more explicitly than they had hitherto done. The compromise had no other name given it but that of a conspiracy;

rted

con-

the

ould

rder

nose

ince

or-

ry,

ave

s of

ieur

and

ar-

non

re-

let-

of

een

of

rid.

cel-

nts.

han no cy; and the popular infurrections were never mentioned but as an open rebellion. There was no longer any room to doubt that the king, by the advice of Granvelle and Alva, was determined to wreck his refentment on all concerned, and particularly on them, whom he confidered as the most guilty. And although at first domestic forces only were to be employed, yet their operations would soon be seconded by those of Spain.

The prince of Orange had several times desired leave of the regent to resign his employments; alledging, that it was impossible for him at once to discharge his duty to his country, and to satisfy the king. The regent had as often resused to consent to his request; and had accompanied her resusal with expressions of high regard, and with entreaties that he would not forsake her at a time when his assistance was more than ever necessary. On the present occasion he made the same application to the king, who gave him the same answer, and employed the same expressions of regard and considence "."

But the prince had received intelligence of Philip's most fecret councils; and he knew that his real fentiments were entirely different from those which he professed. Through a correspondence which he held in France, he had procured a VII.

Bentivoglio. See the letter annexed to William's

to

of

ol

In

th

ti

q

2 T

CI

ra

bi

pr

ha lo

W

no W

W

be

pr

W

no ha

an po

dr

di

w

fai

VII.

BOOK copy of a letter to the regent, from Alava the Spanish minister at Paris, which confirmed the information that had been transmitted by the marquis of Mons and the baron of Montigny. In this letter, Alava particularly infifted on the prefent favorable opportunity of establishing in the Low Countries that unlimited authority which the king had long so earnestly defired. He advised the regent, as matters were not ripe for execution, to meet the smooth faces of Orange, Horn, and Egmont, with the same artifice which they had employed; and concluded with informing her, that the king, who knew them to be fomenters of all the disturbances which had happened, would foon pay them the wages of their iniquity; and had fworn to punish them and the other inhabitants of the Netherlands in the most exemplary

7567 Conference at Dendre. monde.

This letter the prince of Orange communicated to his brother count Lewis, and to the counts Egmont, Horn, Hoogstraten, and feveral others of the nobility; who met together in Dendremonde, to deliberate concerning the measures which it would be proper to purfue. Count Lewis, who was naturally bold and ardent, urged that they should immediately incite the people

The concluding words of the letter are, " in a manner, that would make the ears of all Christendom " tingle, even though it should put in danger all the rest of his dominions." Brandt, 216. Reidanus, p. 3. Meteren, lib. ii.

the

the

the

In

pre-

the

the

the

to

and

had

er,

s of

uld

and

bit-

lary

ited

ints

ners

dre-

ires

unt

ged

ple

n a

dom rest

Me-

to take up arms; but his brother the prince of Orange disapproved of this proposal, and observed, that if they should begin to wage war in the present situation of affairs, they would neither be able to carry it on with fuccess, nor to justify their conduct in undertaking it. That the inquifition and edicts were in effect abolished; and a reasonable liberty allowed in matters of religion. That, confidering the tumults which had been excited, the regent could not be greatly blamed for raising forces; especially since she had levied none but such as were natives of the Netherlands. At present they could not alledge any good reason for having recourse to arms; but he believed that ere long the best and strongest reasons would not be wanting. And in the mean time his advice was, not only to be on their guard themselves, but likewife to waken in the people a fense of the danger with which they were threatened, that they might be prepared for entering upon action when the proper season should arrive.

Had count Egmont been of the same opinion with the prince of Orange on this occasion, it is not to be doubted that all who were present would have concurred in the measures which he advised; and considering the greatness of their power and popularity, they might have induced the king to drop his plan, by making him sensible of the difficulty of carrying it into execution.

But they were all exceedingly disappointed when they heard count Egmont declare, a That far from taking part in any measure that might be

BOOK VII. 1567. BOOK VII. 19674

offensive to the king, he looked upon every such measure as equally imprudent and undutiful. That from the enormities which had been committed, the king had some reason to entertain suspicions of their vigilance. That, for his own part, he was resolved, if possible, to wipe out these suspicions, by exerting himfelf ftrenuoufly to reduce the people to a state of perfect tranquillity and obedience; which if he and the other governors could accomplish in their respective provinces, he believed they should hear no more of the Spanish forces; for after what the king had repeatedly told him when in Spain, he could not regard what he had heard of his intention to rob the Netherlands of their liberty."

CI

W

re

th

re ft

le

ui

ar

to

pl

P

ha

tr

ha

ha

th

th

CI

fe

pl

th

te

th

an

tu

pr

re

ur

The prince of Orange and the other discontented lords spent several hours in attempting to bring him over to their opinion, but in vain. Although, as is above related, the count had received sufficient proof of Philip's infincerity in his discourse with him at Madrid, yet the concern which he had appeared to take in the interest of his family, joined to his professions of personal attachment, had imposed upon him fo far as to prevent him from perceiving

the danger to which he was exposed ".

The nobility concur with the regent.

Thus disappointed of the affistance of a person of fo great influence, the other lords faw that nothing remained for them, but to conciliate Philip's favor, by an active concurrence with the regent in the measures which she was about to employ for the perfect fettlement of the country.

37 Bentivoglio.

fuch That

tted.

ns of

was

ons,

ople

nce; com-

they r af-

vhen

eard heir

tentring

igh,

lent

him ared

his

ofed

ing

rfon

no-

lip's

rent

oloy

. A great deal had been already done for this BOOK. end by the governors of the provinces; but matters. were not yet entirely upon the footing on which the regent defired to have them placed. The zeal of in suppressing the reformers burnt with too much violence to be the reformrestrained by the authority of the magistrates, and still continued to discover itself in the most unjustifiable irregularities; particularly in the city of Valenciennes, where the common people had almost univerfally embraced the reformation. The strength and populousness of that city, its neighbourhood to France, and the correspondence which the people held with the protestants in that kingdom, were powerful motives with the regent for defiring to have a garrison placed in it, composed of those troops which had been lately raifed. She wished to have had them admitted with the confent of the inhabitants; but finding that it could not be obtained. the declared them rebels to the king, and ordered the lord of Noircharmes to beliege the town. The citizens feemed at first resolved to defend themfelves; but when they faw the batteries ready to play, their courage failed, and they furrendered the city at difcretion. Noircharmes no fooner entered it, than he ordered the governor and his fon. the protestant ministers, and several of the inhabitants who had been the most active in the late difturbances, to be put to death; after which, having prohibited the public exercise of the reformed religion, he left a strong garrison in the place, under the command of a rigid catholic.

The fuccess of the regent's arms filled the

Her fuccefs

BOOK VII. 1567.

protestants with terror, and inspired the catholics with fresh courage and resolution. She was not less successful in Tournay, Bois le Duc, and many other places. She even perfuaded the city of Antwerp to receive a garrison, by means of which the catholic party acquired so great authority, and the reformers were so much intimidated, that, without opposition, she banished all the protestant preachers, and abolished the exercise of their religion

R

in

to

th

IV

re

H

fo

H

bu

CI

be

fo

T

W

We

Tel

in

wh

no

gir

and

•f

Count Brederode and some others of the confederated lords had recourse at this time to their first expedient of a petition or remonstrance. But neither the regent nor the confederates were now in the fame fituation as formerly. She had no longer any reason to be afraid of them, since she was so well provided with an armed force; and many of them having before this time become fensible of their weakness, had studied to convince her that they were now entirely devoted to her fervice.

Count Brederode desired to be admitted into her presence, but this she refused; and vouchsafed no other answer to his petition, but "That he, and those who concurred with him, had wrested her concessions into a sense which she had never meant; and, by encouraging riots and tumults, had broken their agreement with her, and thereby forfeited their title to complain ".

From this answer Brederode perceived there was no other resource left him but force of arms.

Bentivoglio. p. 47. Brandt and Bentivoglio.

Resolved to try his fortune in this way, he went BOOK immediately into Holland, and having drawn together a body of troops, he fortified himself in the town of Vianen. But the counts Aremberg and Megen coming fuddenly upon him, he was foon reduced to the necessity of retiring into Germany. He returned to the Low Countries in the year following, and died in the town of Harnhoff'. He was a person much respected by the protestants, but appears to have possessed more zeal than capacity, and to have been in no respect qualified to be the leader of a party.

After count Brederode was expelled, the re- Tranquillity formers had no where courage to lift their heads. effablished. The storm which had raged with fo much fury was fucceeded by a perfect calm. The churches were repaired, the altars restored, the images replaced, and the magistrates respected and obeyed, in the fame manner as before the disturbances began: while the discontented lords seemed now to have no other ambition, but to surpass one another in giving proofs of their attachment to the regent. and of their zeal in the service of the church and of the king".

30 Brandt and Bentivoglie.

Bentivoglio, p. 48.

olics

not

and

city

of

rity,

that,

Pant

heir

nfe-

first

nei-

v in

ger

s fo

of

of

hat

nto

fed

and

her nt;

cen

ted

ere ns.

.

VII. 1567.

HISTORY

P

C

Pd

P

fo

th wi

for

rei

fer

du

to tria

dea

exp

be

on

fen

trea

bee

ties

ten

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK VIII.

BOOK
VIII.
1567.
Deliberations
at the court of

WHILE the dutchess of Parma was thus succefsfully employed in quieting the difturbances in the Netherlands, Philip was only deliberating on the subject. The regent had joined with the confederated lords in reprefenting, that his prefence would prove the most effectual remedy for the evils which prevailed; and this was the opinion too of some of his Spanish ministers. He had long talked as if he intended to comply with their counsel. He had even given orders for preparing thips for his voyage, and all Europe was in expectation of its taking place. But if he was ever ferious in proposing it, he was easily induced to alter his intention, by the dread of those inconveniences or dangers with which he apprehended it might be accompanied. These inconveniences and dangers would have been difregarded by the late emperor;

who undertook a journey to the Netherlands, and put himself in the power of Francis, his rival and antagonist, in order to quell an insurrection in the city of Ghent. But Philip had neither the same personal courage and activity as Charles, nor that degree of affection for his subjects in the Low Countries, which was necessary to make him expose himself to danger on their account; and through his whole reign he chose rather to iffue forth orders from his cabinet, than to execute his

schemes in person '.

9

fuc.

s in

r on

con-

ence

the

nion

long

their

aring

ex-

ever

alter

ences

night ngers

eror;

Having therefore resolved not to go to the Ne- Philip retherlands himself, it remained for him to determine, folves to fend the duke of whether he should fend thither an army, to compel Alva to the the people to fubmit to his will, and to punish them Netherlands for their disobedience; or should listen to their remonstrances and complaints. His counfellors differed widely in their opinions from each other. The duke of Feria and the prince of Evoli advised him to abolish the inquisition and edicts, and to make trial of gentler and more indulgent methods of dealing with the reformers; fince he had fufficiently experienced that severe ones were not likely to be attended with success. But the duke of Alva. on the other hand, and cardinal Granvelle, reprefented, that nothing but too much lenity in the treatment of the heretics in the Low Countries had been the cause of that insolence, and those enormities, in which they had discovered an equal contempt of the true religion and of the royal authority.

BOOK VIII. 1567.

Bentivoglio, ann. 1567. Herrera, lib. ix.

BOOK VIII. 1567.

This was not the proper feason, they alledged, for the exercise of clemency. The king had too long received laws from the Netherlands, instead of giving them. The people in these provinces had long and loudly boafted of their privileges. If they were not speedily chastised for their insolence and prefumption, they would ere long dispute the king's having any right to command them, and form themselves into an independent state, in opposition to him, as the Swiss Cantons had done formerly in opposition to his German ancestors; or, which was still more likely, the prince of Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn, would, under the pretence of defending the liberties of the people, reduce them under their own power, and divide the feveral provinces as a prey among themfelves. Besides, what happier opportunity, said Alva, can be wished for than the present, for introducing an army into the Low Countries, in order to establish the royal authority there on the fame defirable footing as in Spain and Italy.

No arguments could be better fuited to the temper and inclinations of the king; and accordingly, without further hesitation, he resolved to send to the Netherlands a strong and well disciplined army, under the command of the duke of Alva, whom, from long experience, he knew to be qualified in every respect for executing the plan of tyranny and oppression which he was determined to pursue.

d

a

it

h

fe

p

p

ft

fu

a

ce

OT

tr

to

rè

fu

an

of

di

pi

a

an

0

a

aff

Bentivoglio.

ged,

too

Read

inces

s. If

ence

e the

and

op-

e for-

Or,

inge,

nder

peo-

and

hem-

faid

r in-

, in

n the

tem-

igly,

d to

lined

lva,

o be

plan

ined

İn

In the mean time the dutchess of Parma had re- BOOK duced the affairs of the Low Countries into the fituation which is above described. She sent speedy information to the king of the fuccess with which her endeavours had been accompanied; and repre- against in fented to him, that there was not now the least occasion for the army which he had begun to prepare, fince the tumults were allayed, the rioters punished, the heretics silenced, the church reinstated in its wonted authority, garrisons put into fuspected places, and the whole country fettled in a state of perfect order and tranquillity.

Had Philip been in reality influenced by the motives which he pretended, he would, on receiving this intelligence, have countermanded the orders which he had iffued for the march of the troops. But in iffuing these orders it is impossible to believe, that he was prompted either by zeal for religion, or concern for the welfare of his Flemish fubjects; but partly by the ambition of establishing among them a despotic government on the ruins of their ancient constitution, (a measure which the distance of the Netherlands from his seat of em' pire must have rendered peculiarly desirable to a prince of fo imperious a temper) and partly by an implacable refentment against the prince of Orange and the other lords, who had discovered freeze the best buildeness a jealoufy of his defigns.

Regardless therefore of the change which the Philip's affairs in the Netherlands had lately undergone. Philip persisted in his purpose. The duke of Alva went by fea for Italy, and thence, after

VOL. I. R

VIII. 1564. The regent

BOOK having affembled the feveral bodies of troops which were cantoned there, amounting to eight VIII. 1567. thousand foot and one thousand five hundred horse, he directed his march towards the Low Countries, first through the territories of the duke of Savoy, and then through Burgundy and Lorrain. His army was augmented on its march. by the addition of three hundred Burgundian cavalry, and four thousand German foot, and soon reached the province of Luxemburgh, without meeting with any molestation by the way. After putting garrisons in some of the frontier towns. he fet out for Bruffels, where he arrived in the month of August one thousand five hundred and fixty-feven '.

The aftonishment excited by the arrival of Spaniards.

His arrival spread great consternation and astonishment over all the provinces. Many thousand persons had before this time left the Netherlands; Alva and the among whom was the prince of Orange, who, having long foreseen the impending storm, had withdrawn with his family and friends to his county of Nassau in Germany. He knew well how inveterate those prejudices were, which the king had for feveral years entertained against him; and could not account for this fending to the Low Countries fo formidable an army, commanded by a man fo tyrannical as Alva, without supposing that he was determined to rule the people with a rod of iron; and, at the fame time, to wreck his vengeance upon him, and all

Herrera, lib. ix. c. 3.

fuch of the nobility as had ventured to dispute BOOK his will.

troops eight

indred

Low

duke Lor-

narch.

an ca-

foon

After

wns,

n the

d and

alto-

uland

ands;

who,

had

o his

well

h the

gainst

ng to

com-

thout

the

fame

d all

VIII.

1767.
The princ of Orange retires to Germany.

The prince would gladly have prevailed upon count Egmont to accompany him, and endeavoured to open his eyes to the approaching danger. He repeated the evidence which he had formerly laid before him of the king's intentions, and he reminded him of the imperious character of Alva; who, from being their enemy and rival, was become their master, and would not fail to employ his power to accomplish their ruin. But count Egmont was the father of a numerous family, which he could not support with dignity in any other country but the Netherlands. Conscious too of his fidelity, and of the important fervices which he had performed to the king, he could not be persuaded that Philip was infincere in the professions of friendship which he had made to him in Spain; nor could he believe that he would indulge his refentment any farther, than to punish those who had been concerned in the late disorders.

The prince of Orange finding the count inflexible, left him, with these words: "You are the bridge, count Egmont, by which the duke of Alva will pass into the Netherlands, and he will no sooner pass it, than he will break it down. You will repent of despising the warning which I have given you, but I dread that your repentance will be too late."

In the interval between the departure of the prince of Orange in April one thousand five hun-

VIII. 1567.

BOOK dred and fixty-feven, and the arrival of the duke of Alva in the month of August following, count Egmont perceived his importance much diminished: but he resolved to submit to his present disagreeable fituation, and even humbled himfelf for far as to receive and welcome Alva in the province of Luxemburgh, where he made him a present of two fine horses, as a mark of his defire to live with him on amicable terms. Alva received this present with the haughtiness that was natural to him; but in all his behaviour towards the count, he diffembled his intention, till he was prepared to put it in execution.

Imprisonment of the counts Egmont and

September.

One of his first acts after he came to Bruffels was, to cast both count Egmont and count Horn into prison. As the deed itself was tyrannical, so the manner of it was infidious. Count Egmont, having been first deceived himself, was employed to draw count Horn into the fnare . When Alva found that their apprehensions were laid asleep, he defired one day that they would come to his house, to give him their opinion with regard to a citadel which he proposed to build in Antwerp; and after the business for which they had been called was over, they were carried on different pretences into Separate apartments, count Egmont by Alva himfelf, and count Horn by his fon Frederic de Toledo. " Count Egmont, " faid Alva, " deliver your fword; it is the will of the king that you give it up, and go to prison. " The count, asto-

d

t

0 f

Strada , p. 215.

nished at this unexpected declaration, would have BOOK attempted to escape; but observing himself immediately furrounded by Alva's guards, he delivered his fword, faying, "By this fword the cause of the king has been oftener than once fuccessfully defended . " Both he and count Horn protested, that, as knights of the Golden Fleece, they could be judged only by their peers, and imprisoned only by their authority. But no regard was paid to this protestation. They were hurried away to prison, in a place at a distance from Brussels, and out of the confines of the province where they refided; in violation of a facred privilege, which, by a fundamental law, belonged even to the lowest of the people ".

Intelligence of this event (which was imme. The people diately followed by the imprisonment of count reign parts. Egmont's fecretary, the lord of Bickerzel, and feveral other persons of distinction) was soon conveyed to the remotest corners of the Netherlands. and filled the minds of the catholics as well as protestants with the most disquieting apprehensions. It was no fecurity, they faw, against the king's refentment, to have adhered to the profession of the catholic faith, nor even to have been active in opposing the reformers. None were conscious of fo much merit of this kind, and none had diftinguished themselves so highly in the service of the king, as those illustrious persons who were now

VIII. 1567.

duke

count

minish-

t dif-

felf fo

vince

ent of

with

refent

; but

e difput it

uffels

Horn

al, fo

nont,

loved

Alva , he

ouse,

itadel

after

was

into

him-

To-

eliver

you afto-

Strada, p. 215.

Grotius and Bentivoglio.

BOOK VIII. 1567. devoted to destruction. Men therefore of all ranks were greatly alarmed, and began to abandon their habitations; and it was computed that, at this time, and a little before Alva's arrival, more than a hundred thousand persons fled into foreign parts. Great numbers of these were the most industrious of the people, who transferred their knowledge of arts and manufactures into the countries which gave them refuge; and thereby enriched the dominions of Philip's enemies whilst they impoverished his own.

T

0

fi

te

ar

go

th

of

pu

hi

flo

hig

had

of

rati

bef

tho

of

felv

tion

ten

The dutchess of Parma leaves the Netherlands

The imprisonment of the counts Horn and Egmont was matter of furprise to no person so much as to the regent. Philip had affured her, that although he had conferred on Alva the command of the army, yet the authority of regent was still to remain in her hands; and the royal commission which Alva produced on his first arrival, was agreeable to this declaration. But she could not persuade herself that the duke would have presumed to make fo violent an encroachment on her prerogative, by the imprisonment of two of the first persons in the state, unless he had been invested with an authority much superior to that of which she had been informed. The king had not been ingenuous, she suspected, in his conduct towards her, and had conferred powers on Alva by which her authority as regent was impaired. This she considered as a proof that Philip had listened to the calumnies of her enemies, and did not

Van Meteren, p. 80.

repose in her that trust and confidence which she BOOR was conscious her zeal to promote his interest had deserved. She judged that it would be derogatory to her honor, to remain any longer in the Netherlands: and immediately applied for liberty to retire. After repeated folicitations, she at length obtained permission, and left Brussels in the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and fixty-eight, much regretted by all the inhabitants of the Low Countries, and particularly by the protestants, to whom her administration appeared mild and gentle, when they compared it with that which they had reason to expect under their present governor .

After the departure of the dutchess of Parma, Alva's ablo the authority of regent remained entire in the hands rity. of Alva; and by the royal mandate, which he published, it appeared, that Philip had vested him with higher powers than had ever been beflowed on any former governor. They were much higher than as fovereign of the Low Countries he had a right to bestow, and were utterly subversive of all the laws and privileges which at his inauguration he had folemnly fworn to maintain. But before this time he had had recourse to that method of justifying iniquity, of which the votaries of the Romish church have so often availed themfelves; he had obtained from the pope a dispensation from his oath, and no longer difguifed his intention to establish a despotic government in the

VIII. 15674

Bentivoglio and Strada.

Netherlands, on the ruins of the ancient constitu-BOOK tion. Besides the absolute command of the army, VIII. Alva's commission bore, that the king had confer-15674 red upon him the presidency of the three councils, of state, of justice, and the finances; with full power to punish or to pardon crimes of every fort, as he should judge to be expedient.

The council of tumults.

He began his administration with publishing a declaration, that a month should be allowed to the reformers for preparing to leave the country, without receiving during that space any trouble or molestation; and at the same time he issued secret orders to the inquisitors to proceed immediately in the execution of the edicts with the utmost rigor.

0

tl

in

rit

fu

fee

ref

cit

ex

ha

pla

OV

pec

five

gav

tho

Eng

ny

and

the

wer

drea

lame

muc

Firft deed of the council.

To affift and encourage these men in the exercife of their office, he instituted a new council, to which he gave the name of the Council of Tumults, which he appointed to take cognizance of the late diforders, and to fearch after and punish all those who had been concerned directly or indirectly in promoting them. This council confifted of twelve persons, the greatest part of whom were Spaniards. The duke was the president himself, and in his absence, Vargas, a Spanish lawyer distinguished above all his countrymen by his avarice and cruelty.

One of the first deeds of this tribunal, which might well be called, as the Flemings termed it, the Council of Blood, was to declare, That to have presented, or subscribed any petition against the late erection of bishoprics, or against the edicts

Brandt, p. 260. 265, &c.

or inquisition, or to have permitted the exercise BOOK of the new religion under any pretence whatever; or to infinuate by word of mouth or writing, that the king has no right to abolish those pretended privileges which have been the fource of fo much impiety, is treason against the king, and justly merits the severest punishment he shall be pleased to inflict ".

VIII. 1567.

The governor had already stationed his army in The perfects fuch a manner as he thought would most effectually. fecure the execution of this cruel, undistinguishing resolution of the council. In Antwerp he built a citadel, and compelled the inhabitants to defray the expense which this instrument of their own flavery had cost him. He began to build citadels in other places; and, in the mean time, he spread his troops over the country in fuch formidable bodies, that the people, over whom they exercised the most oppresfive tyranny, either forfook their habitations, or gave themselves up to despair. Above twenty thousand persons escaped at this time into France. England, and the protestant provinces of Germany ". Great numbers were prevented from flying. and feized whilft they were meditating flight by the cruel hand of the persecutor. The innocent were overwhelmed with horror at the fight of the dreadful punishments inflicted on the guilty; and lamented that this once flourishing country, fo much distinguished for the mildness of its govern-

[&]quot; Brandt and Bentivoglio, Van Meteren, lib. iii. p. 66.

ment and the happiness of its people, should now BOOK present no other object to view, but confiscations, VIII. 1567.

imprisonments, and blood 13.

There was no distinction made of age, fex, or condition. Persons in their earliest youth; persons worn out, and ready to fink under the infirmities of age; persons of the highest rank, as well as the lowest of the people, on the slightest evidence, and fometimes even on bare fuspicion, were alike facrificed to the rapacity and cruelty of the governor and his affociates.

f

i

tl

e:

th

in

th

pi

W

fc

th

du

fta

an

the

WI

gu

nit

off

op

gui

bet

gat

hig

hap

Cruelty of affociates.

Although in the space of a few months up-Alva and his wards of eighteen hundred persons suffered by the hand of the executioner; yet the duke of Alva's thirst of blood was not satiated. Prisoners were not brought in fo fast, nor seized in such considerable numbers, as he desired. The time of Carnival was approaching, when he expected that he should find the reformers off their guard. They would then leave their skulking places, he supposfed, and visit their families, while the catholics were immersed in mirth and dissipation. On this occasion his soldiers, accompanied by the inquisitors, like fo many wolves, were let loofe among the protestants; who were seized in the middle of the night in their beds, and from thence dragged to prisons and dungeons.

> Many who had been only once present at the protestant assemblies, even although they declared their faith in the catholic religion to be firm and

Bentivoglio, p. 58.

unshaken, were hanged or drowned; while those BOOK who professed themselves to be protestants, or refused to abjure their religion, were put to the rack. in order to make them discover their associates: they were then dragged by horses to the place of execution, and their bodies being committed to the flames, their fufferings were prolonged with ingenious cruelty.

To prevent them from bearing testimony, in the midst of their torments, to the truth of their profession, their executioners were not satisfied with barely confining their tongues; they first scorched them with a glowing iron, and then screwed them into a machine, contrived on purpose to pro-

duce the most excruciating pain "3.

It is shocking to recount the numberless instances of inhuman cruelty perpetrated by Alva and his affociates, especially when we consider that the unhappy victims were not those hardened wretches, who, by daring and bloody deeds, are guilty of violating the laws of nature and humanity, but were generally perfons of the most inoffensive characters; who, having imbibed the new opinions in religion, had too much probity to difguise their sentiments; or at the worst, had been betrayed into indifcretions by their zeal for propagating truths, which they believed to be of the highest importance, to the glory of God and the happiness of men.

Alva communicated a great share of his savage

vIII. 1567.

[&]quot; Brandt and Van Meteren, p. 69.

VIII.

fpirit to the inferior magistrates; who knew that they could not recommend themselves more effectually either to the king or to the governor, than by the exercise of rigor and severity. Several of them, however, whose humanity prevailed over the considerations of safety and interest, were induced to give the protestants timely warning to withdraw. Even the members of the bloody council began to feel their hearts revolt against the reiterated instances of cruelty, to which their fanction was required. Some of them applied for dismission; others had the courage to absent themselves; and out of the twelve, of which the council was composed, there were seldom above three or four present.

tl

m

01

of

hi

rea

du

for

the

lik

no

in

wh

COL

the the Phi

der

fror

plan

fuce

the

Alva's tyranny and arrogance.

About this time the magistrates of Antwerp, whose behaviour from the beginning of Alva's administration had been extremely obsequious, thought they might venture to interpose in favor of certain citizens whom the inquisitors had imprisoned. Their petition was conceived in the humblest terms; and they represented, that although the persons for whom they pleaded, had been present

of these were subscribed only by two or three; as that, for instance, against Antony Van Stralen, which was signed only by Vargas and two others. Except during the first two or three months, Alva seldom attended, but all the sentences were dictated by him; and his presence was rendered unnecessary by the active and unrelenting cruelty of Vargas. Grimestone.

two or three times in the protestant assemblies, yet BOOK it was only curiofity that led them thither; they were still true fons of the church, and faithful subnects to the king; and they had remained in the country till the time of their imprisonment, on the faith of the declaration which the governor had made, that they should not receive any disturbance on account of what had passed, till the expiration of a month after his arrival in the Netherlands.

To this petition Alva haughtily replied, That he was amazed at their folly in prefuming to apply to him in behalf of heretics; and they should have reason, he added, to repent bitterly of their conduct, if they did not act more prudently in future; for they might rest affured, that he would hang them all, for an example to deter others from the

like prefumption ".

Notwithstanding this, some of the catholic nobility, and Viglius, who had formerly concurred in all the arbitrary measures of Granvelle, but whose heart melted at the present misery of his countrymen, had the courage to remonstrate to the king against the governor's barbarity. Even the pope exhorted him to greater moderation. Philip, however, refused to countermand the orders which he had given, till he should hear from Vargas; who advised him to persevere in the plan which he had adopted, affured him of its fuccess, and at the same time flattered him with the hopes of an inexhaustible fund of wealth that

VIII. 1567

¹⁵ Brandt, p. 265.

BOOK VIII. 1567. would arise from confiscation. Vargas being seconded by the inquisitors at Madrid, Philip lent a deaf ear to the remonstrance which had been made to him; and the persecutions were continued with the same unrelenting sury as before ...

ce

an

in

en

ter

me

ter

de

de

int

COL

(

fon

hav

as

and

fron

ing

wer

nigh

and

his

com

chaf

tend

a d

guar

to h

men

Mistory of Don Carlos.

The people of the Netherlands were confirmed in their despair of obtaining mercy from Philip, by the accounts transmitted to them at this time from Spain, of his cruel treatment of his fon Don Carlos. Various relations are given of that tragical and mysterious affair by the contemporary historians; but the following appears the most consistent and probable. This young prince had from his earliest youth been noted for the impetuolity and violence of his temper; and though he never gave reason to think favorably of his understanding, or his capacity for government, he had discovered the most intemperate ambition to be admitted by his father to a share in the administration of his dominions. Philip, whether from jealoufy or a conviction of his fon's unfitness for any important trust, refused to gratify his ambition, and behaved towards him with distance and referve; while he bestowed all his confidence on the duke of Alva, Ruy Gomez de Sylva, and the president Spinosa; against whom Don Carlos, partly on this account, and partly because he considered them as fpies upon his conduct, had conceived the most irreconcileable aversion. In this disposition

Brandt. Thuanus, c. 43. p. 9.

he did not scruple, on different occasions, to BOOK censure the measures of his father's government, and particularly those which had been adopted in the Netherlands. He had fometimes expressed his compassion for the people there; had threatened the duke of Alva, and even made an attempt upon his life, for accepting the government; had been suspected of holding secret interviews with the marquis of Mons and the baron de Montigny; and had afterwards formed the defign of retiring into the Netherlands, with an intention to put himself at the head of the malecontents.

Of this defign intelligence was carried by fome of the courtiers to the king; who, after having consulted with the inquisitors at Madrid, as he usually did in matters of great importance and difficulty, refolved to prevent the prince from putting his scheme in execution, by depriving him of his liberty. For this purpose he went into his chamber in the middle of the night, attended by fome of his privy-counfellors and guards; and, after reproaching him with his undutiful behaviour, told him that he had come to exercise his paternal correction and chastisement. Then having dismissed all his attendants, he commanded him to be clothed in a dark-colored mourning drefs, and appointed guards to watch over him, and to confine him to his chamber. The high-spirited young prince was extremely shocked at such unworthy treatment, and prayed his father and his attendants

BOOK VIII. 1568. to put an immediate end to his life. He threw himself headlong into the fire, and would have destroyed himself, had he not been prevented by the guards. During his confinement, his despair and anguish rose to a degree of frenzy. He would fast sometimes for whole days together, then eat voraciously, and endeavour to choke himself by swallowing his victuals without chewing. Several princes interceded for his releafe, as did many of the principal Spanish nobles. But the father was relentless and inexorable. After fix months imprisonment, he caused the inquisition of Madrid to pass sentence against his fon, and, under the cover of that fentence, ordered poison to be given him, which in a few hours put a period to his miferable life, at the age of twenty-three ".

murder remodele

alholice

Sonfarly thave

gralural death

Philip had, before this time, given a proof of the cruelty of his disposition; when, as above related, he chose to be present at the execution of his protestant subjects in Spain. His singular conduct on that occasion, and the composure with which he beheld the torments of the unhappy sufferers, were ascribed by some to the power of superstition; while they were regarded by others, as the most convincing evidence of the sincerity of his zeal for the true religion. But his severity towards his son did not admit of any such interpretation. It was considered by all the

world

fe

au

al

tri

fre

ex

th

bu

inf

the

W

an

in

pe

Bu

in

and

. . . .

" t

cor

ref

land

pea

was

the him

of .

on

vii. p. 225, &c.

world as a proof that his heart was dead to the BOOK fentiments of natural affection and humanity; and his subjects were every where filled with astonishment. It struck terror in a particular manner into the inhabitants of the Low Countries; who faw how vain it was to expect mercy from a prince, who had fo obstinately refused to exercise it towards his own fon; whose only crime. they believed, was his attachment to them, and his compassion for their calamities.

This unhappy people had no resource lest The prince but in the wisdom, public spirit, and extensive cited to influence of the prince of Orange. Soon after stand his the duke of Alva's arrival in the Netherlands, William had been cited to appear before him; and a declaration had been published by Alva, in the name of the king, that in case of his appearance, the utmost lenity would be shown him. But the prince was too fagacious to be caught in this snare. He resused to obey the citation, and affigned the following reasons for his resulal.

"The citation was of fuch a nature," he faid, He refuses " that the duke of Alva could not expect his compliance with it. It was contrary in feveral respects to the fundamental laws of the Netherlands; the time allowed him to make his appearance was not what the laws prescribed a and was fo thort, that, confidering his distance from the place of trial, it was utterly impossible for him to appear on the day appointed. The duke of Alva was a judge, whose authority he must on every account decline; fince, as a knight of

VOL. I.

e

d

the Golden Fleece, he could be judged only by BOOK his peers; and, as an inhabitant of Brabant, by VIII. 1568. his fellow-citizens. It was a breach of his privileges to commit the power of judging him to a person who was qualified in neither of these respects; and when injustice was done him in the very nomination of his judge, he had little reason to hope for justice in the decision of his cause; especially when he considered, that the duke of Alva had long been his personal enemy, and had lately without hearing what he had to fay in his defence, proceeded on the suppofition of his being guilty, and had feized violently, and fent to Spain, his fon the count of Buren, who was purfuing his studies in the university of Louvain; trusting for the security of his person.

His fon carried to Spain.

of the place where he refided." At the fame time with the prince of Orange. confiscated the earls of Hoogstraten and Culemberg, and feveral other noblemen, were cited to answer for their conduct; and, as foon as the short term allowed to them for making their appearance was expired, Alva pronounced sentence against them, and confiscated their effects. He ordered the house of count Culemberg in Bruffels to be pulled down, because the confederates had sometimes held their assemblies in it; and he declared all the estates of the prince of Orange, who I besides his principality in the kingdom of France) poffessed several in the Low Countries, and some of great extent in Burgundy, to be forfeited to

to his unquestionable innocence, and the privileges

9 P PI th th

tl

pa fel du of his mi

to

Ph giv che am in mai

rigi P as fi to e ed,

in t

to F fubi care

the king; a confiderable share of the profits of BOOK which, if we may credit some historians, he either applied to his own use, or bestowed on the numerous informers whom he employed.

The prince of Orange was too well ac- He employs quainted with Philip's inflexible temper, to ex- the inter. pect that any confideration or influence would the emprevail with him to redress his grievances; yet, perar. that he might more clearly evince to the world the necessity which he lay under of having recourse to arms, he fent to the emperor Maximilian, a particular account of the treatment which he himfelf had received, and of the cruelty which the duke of Alva was exercifing against the people of the Netherlands; and entreated him to employ his good offices in his and their behalf. Maximilian, a prince entirely opposite in character to Philip, readily complied with this request. To give his intercession the greater weight, he made choice of his brother Charles of Austria for his ambassador; and instructed him to represent, that in his opinion, and that of all the princes in Germany, the present conduct of the duke of Alva in the Low Countries was no less impolitic than rigid and fevere.

Philip's answer to this remonstrance was such Philip's re. as from his well known character there was reason ply to the to expect. The severities which had been employed, he said, had not yet been found sufficient to repress the pride and insolence of his Flemish fubjects; and he hoped the emperor would take care not to permit any troops to be raifed against

BOOK him in Germany by the prince of Orange and his affociates 18. VIII.

1568.

So haughty an answer, given to a prince of the first rank in Europe, who was Philip's near relation, demonstrated that it would be vain and ineffectual to make any further attempt to divert him from his purpose. It contributed likewise to alienate Maximilian from his interest, and thereby facilitated the levies which were foon afterwards made in Germany for carrying on the war.

le

n

d

k

ne

pl

01

N

tic

pr

W

a M

tel

be

po She

of

lip

pri

fan

idle

land

tain Wit

to t

-I

therlands.

The prince The prince of Orange, who for several months of Orange prepares for past had been solicited by the Flemish exiles to an invation take up arms, would willingly have deferred complying with their request, in expectation of a more convenient feason, when Philip might be involved in war with some of the neighbouring nations, and have it less in his power to bestow attention on the Netherlands. But the impatience of the exiles to return home, the great additions which the perfecutions had made to their numbers, and his dread that Alva, were he suffered to proceed, would establish his power on too firm a foundation to be shaken by any force which could be brought against it; all these considerations concurred in determining him immediately to begin his preparations.

In order to raise money, he fold his jewels, plate, and furniture. His brother, count John of Nassau, supplied him with a considerable sum. and he received contributions from the Flemish exiles

Ferreras , 1568.

in London, Embden, Cleves, and other places, BOOK where they had taken shelter. VIII.

He was aware how unable the inhabitants of the His hopes of Netherlands were, to resist the arms of Spain, un- affistance less supported by some foreign power. Philip was not however near fo formidable at this time as during the life of Mary queen of England, who knew no other law but her husband's will, and never scrupled to facrifice the interests of her people to his ambition. Had Mary been still alive. and Philip in possession of his former influence over the English councils, the inhabitants of the Netherlands would have struggled for their liberties in vain. It was fortunate for them, that the princels who fat now upon the throne of England from the was led, both by inclination and interest, to adopt queen of a fystem of politics entirely contrary to that of Mary. For as Elizabeth had established the protestant religion in her own dominions, she hadbefore this time shown herself determined to support the protestants of the neighbouring kingdoms. She had interested herself deeply in the civil wars of France, in favor of the Calvinists, whilst Philip gave affiftance to the opposite party. And the prince of Orange had reason to entertain the most fanguine hopes, that she would not remain an idle spectator of what was passing in the Netherlands.

1

d

1-

n-

n

E,

of

١,

es

He had conceived expectations likewise of obtaining succour from the French protestants; and with this view had communicated all his measures to their leaders, the prince of Condé and the admiral

de Coligni. But his chief dependance was upon BOOK the protestant princes of Germany, whom, ever fince he left the Netherlands, he had strenuously endeavoured to persuade, that if they did not exert themselves with vigor, the liberties of the Netherlands would foon be entirely suppressed; and the trading cities, with the prosperity of which the interest of the higher provinces of Germany was infeparably connected, would be changed into ftrong holds, filled with Spanish troops, which the duke of Alva, as foon as his purpofes in the Low Countries were accomplished, would not fail to employ against the neighbouring powers.

C

l

ti

al

CI

O

in

ce

m

an

fig

ftr

nu

th

Bu

ga

rep

acc

art

of

Wit

and from the German princes.

VIII. I568.

> Prompted by these motives, and by zeal for their religion, the count palatine of the Rhine, the duke of Wurtemberg, the landgrave of Hesse, and feveral other princes, refolved to support William in his intended armament; and accordingly they furnished him with considerable supplies of money, promifed him more, and affifted him in levying troops within their respective territories.

Whilst the prince was employed in making levies in Cleves, Juliers, and other countries adjoining to Brabant and Guelderland, his brother. Count Lewis count Lewis, was no less active in raising forces in the more northern parts of Germany, and in

gathering together the Flemish exiles.

arrives with an army in the Netherlands.

Count Lewis was much fooner ready to take the field than his brother, and he began his march in the end of April or beginning of May. He refolved first to make an attempt on Groningen; and for this purpose he pitched his camp in such a fituation, that whilft he cut off that city from

all correspondence with the neighbouring country, BOOK he kept a communication open with his friends in Germany.

The duke of Alva fent count Aremberg, an Gains a vicofficer of considerable reputation, to oppose him; the Spaniand ordered count Megen, governor of Guelder- ards. land and Zutphen, to march as foon as possible to count Aremberg's affistance, with a regiment of German infantry that was under his command. Upon Aremberg's approach, Lewis drew off his army to a still more advantageous situation; and encamped on a rifing ground with a large morals

in front.

The Spaniards gave at this time a striking proof of that ferocity and infolence which they afterwards discovered on numberless occasions, during the course of the present war. Having conceived the most contemptible opinion of the enemy, they were fired with impatience to engage. and as foon as they came in fight demanded the fignal of battle. Aremberg endeavoured to reftrain their ardor, by representing that the enemy were fo strongly posted, and so much superior in number, that it would be impossible to attack them with fuccess till count Megen should arrive. But the Spaniards were not disposed either to regard his opinion, or to respect his authority. They reproached him with infidelity to the king, and accused him of cowardice and ignorance of the art of war. Aremberg had not sufficient ftrength of mind to despile their reproaches. Inflamed with indignation at their unworthy treatment of

VIII. 1568.

(

A

Ca

lo

ar

ha

to

th

th

in

ma

11

AI

ho

firl

COI

Co

tha

mai

of]

not

gra

mis

to

WOL

with

Ways.

1,19

VIII. 1568.

BOOK him, "Let us march," faid he, "not to conquer, but to be overcome; and not by the arms of the enemy, but by the nature of the place. We shall be buried in the mud and water before we can reach the enemy; but it will foon appear, whether I am wanting either in courage or fidelity to the king." Saying this, he gave orders to advance. The Spaniards were in the front, the Germans in the rear, and the cavalry were distributed in different places as the ground would permit. Lewis rejoiced when he faw them approaching towards him. He had placed his cavalry, under the command of his brother count Adolphus of Nassau, on the right. On the left, his main army was covered by a hill, on which he had planted a strong band of musketeers. Behind him there was a little wood and the walls of a convent; and in his front, the morals above mentioned, which was almost impassable. Yet the Spaniards entered it without hesitation, and continued to advance till they were within reach of the enemy's fire. They came to be fensible of their folly when it was too late. Those who had first entered were prevented from returning by those who followed, and the farther they advanced, they were the more exposed to the enemy's shot, and the more entangled in the mud. When they were in this fituation, Lewis attacked them vigorously in front, while his brother broke in upon their flank with the cavalry. They were cut to pieces almost without refistance. Six hundred Spaniards were killed The Germans furrendered at discretion, and were dismissed, after taking an oath that they

would never more carry arms for the duke of Alva. BOOK Count Aremberg, finding no room to act as general, was obliged to content himfelf with performing the duty of a common foldier; and he and count Adolphus rushing furiously against one another, fell each of them by the other's fword. The Spaniards lost their artillery, baggage, and military cheft. The battle was scarcely ended when count Megen arrived, with so strong a body of troops as would have been sufficient, if they had advanced in time to have changed the fortune of the day. But they were not able alone to face the enemy. And therefore Megen found it necessary to take shelter in Groningen, where he collected the scattered remains of the conquered army ".

The news of this defeat affected the duke of Alva's in-Alva in the most fensible manner. He knew of quietude on how much confequence it was to any cause that the first enterprise should be attended with success. He considered that Lewis had but just entered the Low Countries when he had gained a fignal victory, and that the prince of Orange was ready to begin his march with a still more formidable army than that of Lewis. The neighbouring powers, he doubted not, would be animated by what had happened, to grant the prince those supplies which they had promised him; and the Flemings would be less afraid to declare in his favor. On these accounts he would have marched immediately into Friefland with his whole army, in order to cut off or fcatter

VIII. 1568.

d y

Bentivoglio, p. 67, &c.

BOOK VIII. 1568, The trial of the counts Egmont and Horn.

the troops under Lewis before his brother should arrive. But he thought it necessary before he set out, to dispatch the trial of the counts Egmont and Horn, and some other lords, whom at his first coming into the Netherlands he had thrown into prison. Some of his friends endeavoured to divert him from his purpose, by representing that the prisoners were fo many pledges in his hands for the peaceable behaviour of their adherents; and that putting them to death would only ferve to embitter the refentment of the people, and make them receive the prince of Orange with open arms. But he still perfifted in his resolution, prompted, if we may believe some historians, by the apprehension that during his absence the people might take up arms, and release the prisoners. But if we may credit others, he was influenced rather by revenge than prudence, and could no longer restrain his fury, which was inflamed at this time by the loss which his army had fustained in the late engagement.

to

H

af

du

lai

be

the

tri

PIC

wh

illu

ed fo !

acc

the

noc

Wor

law T

conj form

Neth

first ,

In one day he ordered eighteen persons of rank, whom the council of tumults had pronounced guilty of subscribing the compromise, or of prefenting remonstrances to the dutchess of Parma, to be put to death. Such of them as died catholics were beheaded, and the rest were committed to the flames. Casembrot, the lord of Bickerzel. count Egmont's fecretary, who had been condemned for figning the compromise, was tortured in the most barbarous manner, to make him accuse his friend and master; and when it appeared that his exhausted body was ready to fink under the

torments which he fuffered, Alva, enraged that nothing had been extorted from him which could justify the condemnation of the count, gave orders that he should be drawn asunder by horses ". History scarcely furnishes an instance of so cruel a punishment inflicted for so slight an offence.

Such was the prelude to the trial of the counts Horn and Egmont, which, followed immediately

after what has been just now related.

Although the conduct both of Philip and the duke of Alva, in the Netherlands, and particularly their treatment of these two noblemen, had been an open violation of the laws, yet it was thought necessary to employ the farce of a formal trial before the fentence of condemnation was pronounced. This was intended to lessen the odium which might arise from putting to death two such illustrious persons, who were so exceedingly beloved by the people, and had distinguished themselves to highly in the service of the king. But it was accompanied with the contrary effect. It afforded the two counts an opportunity of placing their innocence in the clearest light, and furnished the world with the most convincing evidence of Philip's lawless tyranny and oppression.

The general charge against them was, that in The charge conjunction with the prince of Orange they had against them. formed a plan to abolifh the king's authority in the Netherlands; and the proofs of this charge were, first, That by their contumelious treatment of

BOOK VIII.

Grimestone and Bentivoglio.

BOOK VIII. 1568.

cardinal Granvelle, they had obliged the king, contrary to his inclination, to remove that prelate from the Low Countries.

W

th

b

W

th

er

afi

an

th

m

ma

the

lib

ha

pre

ma

the

fial

had

Th

pra

had

fo t

thei

at t

to t

to c

2. That they were privy to the confederacy which had been formed to oppose the introduction of the inquisition and edicts; and although count Egmont knew that the lord of Bickerzel had fubscribed the compromise, he had still retained him in his fervice.

3. That they had met at Dendremonde, with the prince of Orange, count Lewis of Nassau, and feveral others, to deliberate about opposing the entrance of the king's army into the Netherlands. And .

4. That, instead of punishing heretics with due feverity, they had in some places granted them liberty to hold openly their affemblies.

Their defences.

. In answer to these accusations, the two lords, after protesting that, as knights of the Golden Fleece, they could not be tried by any other judges but the knights of their order, began with declaring, that they had never entertained a thought to the prejudice of the king's authority; and that when they urged the king to remove cardinal Granvelle from the Netherlands, they believed, and were still persuaded, that his removal was equally calculated to promote the interest of the king and of the provinces. Although they knew of the confederacy, they had neither any concern in it, nor power sufficient to prevent it; and count Egmont had continued to employ the lord of Bickerzel, after knowing that he had figned the compromise, from a conviction that he

was still unshaken in his fidelity to the church and BOOK to the king; of which that nobleman gave afterwards the strongest proof, by exerting himself. with great activity, in detecting and punishing the violaters of the churches. They had indeed been present at a conference in Dendremonde. where count Lewis of Nassau had proposed that they should unite their endeavours to prevent the entrance of the Spanish troops; but, instead of affenting to that propofal, they had disapproved and opposed it. They had done every thing in their power for the suppression of herefy; they had made diligent fearch for the rioters, and punished many of them with great feverity; and although they had in some places granted the protestants liberty to hold their religious affemblies, yet they had done so because they could not otherwise have prevented the demolition of the churches, besides many other mischievous effects, which there was the strongest reason to apprehend from the enthufiaftic rage of the reformers. At the worst, they had been guilty only of an error in judgment. They had lived, and would die in the belief and practice of the catholic religion. And as they had not been wanting in their duty to the church; fo they had lately given incontestable evidence of their devotion to the king, by taking chearfully, at the dutchess of Parma's desire, an oath to obey the king in every thing; and to regard as enemies to the state, all those whom he should be pleased to condemn. In has telepholes beautives to street

conformably and the worders, a first proper

d

e

h

r

y

d

e

VIII

SUBER S

BOOK VIII. 1568. Interceffions in their behalf.

While the prisoners offered these satisfactory defences of their conduct, the most earnest solicitations were employed in their behalf.

The emperor Maximilian, agreeably to the humanity of his character, interceded with Philip in their favor, and flattered himself so strongly with the hopes of fuccess, that, a few days before their execution, he fent to inform the counters of Egmont, that her fears for her husband's life would. he now believed, be happily disappointed.

f

f

W

D

de

gl

m

al

an

kir

de

hir

in

nev

the

dou

truc

Cou

hav

ing

trut

fore

requ

vice:

will

ehild

The dutchess of Parma too, who had never sufpected that the complaints which she had made against the prisoners during her regency, would have been attended with fuch ferious confequences. transmitted to the king, and seconded a petition from the counters of Egmont; in which, after representing that her husband had distinguished himfelf above his equals, first in the service of the late emperor, and fince in that of the king; and that he had often born a principal share in their wars and victories both in Europe and Africa, the concluded with entreating, that if, notwithstanding her busband's defence of his conduct, he should still be found obnoxious to justice; yet, on account of his former fervices, the king would remember him with mercy, and take into confideration the deplorable fituation to which she, and her eleven helpless children, would be reduced, by the ignominious death of her husband.

But Philip, curfed with the most unfeeling heart, remained relentless and inflexible; and conformably to his orders, Alva pronounced

Letter of the countels of Egmont.

sentence of death both against count Egmont and BOOK count Horn, in the beginning of June one thoufand five hundred and fixty-eight, after they had fuffered near nine months imprisonment. fentence was intimated to them in the middle of the night, when they were in bed, by the bishop of Ipres. They received the intelligence with becoming fortitude and refignation. " I am not conscious," faid count Egmont, " of having deferved fuch hard usage from the king, whose glory and interest I have fincerely studied to promote. But I will submit to my fate with patience; although my heart bleeds when I think of my wife and children. "

A few hours before his death he wrote to the Letter of king, "That although it had pleafed him to or count Esder fentence of death to be pronounced against Philip. him as a traitor, and an abettor of heretics; yet in justice to himself he must declare, that he had never failed, in word or in deed, in his duty either to him or to the church. I cannot therefore doubt, continued he, that when you shall receive true information of what has passed in the Low Countries, you will be sensible how unjustly I have been used; having been condemned for doing what I never did or intended; and for the truth of this, I call Almighty God to witness, before whom I shall foon appear. My last and only request is, that on account of my former fervices, and the integrity of my intentions, you will take compassion on my unhappy wife and children; in the hopes of which I will patiently

-

r

h

)-

g

d

272 HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

BOOK submit to the execution of the sentence which has viii. been past against me 21.

June 5th, The execu-

Palmenso Williams

Party.

Both prisoners had, a few days before, been brought from Gheat to Bruffels. Count Egmont was first conducted to the place of execution, with Julio Romero, camp marshal, on one hand, and the bishop of Ipres on the other. The scaffold was covered with black cloth, and furrounded by a strong guard, consisting of nineteen companies of foldiers. The count went up to the scaffold accompanied only by the bishop of Ipres; with whom, having discoursed some time, (on what subject we are not told) he kneeled down and prayed; then rose again, and throwing off his robe, he wrapped his head and face in a handkerchief, and again kneeling down, with his hands joined, he in that posture received the stroke of the executioner.

The head and body, and the blood which flowed from them, were covered with a black cloth, to hide them from the view of count Horn; who was foon after brought thither, accompanied by the same attendants. Having ascended the scaffold, he inquired whether count Egmont was already beheaded; and being told that he was, "We have not seen one another," said he, "since the day when we were cast into prison. But from our fate, my friends," addressing himself to the spectators, "learn to know the measure of obedience required by your superiors. If I have ever

f

th

w

to

to

ы

nia

fhe

tha

he

pli

and

he

qui

31

Strada, &c. daider in a god ada or a carblida

offended any of you, I now alk forgivenels, and BOOK befeech you to affift me with your prayers. " Then having difrobed himfelf, he submitted to his fate with perfect composure and tranquillity.

VIII. 19682

The heads were fet up opposite to each other. on two iron poles, fastened to the sides of the scaffold; where they remained till the afternoon, when they were taken down and delivered, together with the bodies, to the friends of the deceased ".

The unmerited death of these two great men excited universal grief and indignation. Nor could the spectators be deterred, by the numerous troops which furrounded them, from testifying their resentment. Many of them forgetting the danger to which they exposed themselves, rushed forward to the scaffold, dipt their handkerchiefs in the blood, and vowed, in the hearing of the Spaniards, that ere long the governor and his affociates should have reason to repent of the cruel murder that had been committed ".

Count Egmont was forty-fix years of age when charactes he suffered. To the most splendid bodily accom- of count plishments, he joined great gentleness of manners, and the most engaging affability. From his youth he had accompanied the late emperor in his military expeditions, and had on all occasions acquitted himself with the highest honor, while at the fame time he rendered himself universally

d

ls

æ

h

k

15

d

ne

as

s,

ce

m

he

oeer

W

13

Strada.

Bentivoglio. but both on all south a storage of south

VOL. L

BOOK VIII. 1568.

beloved. Of the two victories which Philip's armies gained over the French at St. Quentin and Gravelines, it is allowed that the one was owing in a great measure, and the other entirely, to count Egmont. As all men were acquainted with the advantages which Philip derived from these victories, they were shocked at the ungrateful return which he now made to the perfon by whose valor and conduct they had been obtained 24.

fi

O

W

th

la

ca

for

the

no

ne

the

mu

bro

arri

beg and

at I

beti

fool

Span

men

es againft count Lewis.

Friend 1

Alva march. After this dismal catastrophe, Alva having nothing to prevent him from turning his whole attention to the war with count Lewis of Nassau. ordered bridges to be thrown over the Maele, the Rhine, and the Isfel, and marched directly to the enemy. He reached Deventer, where he had given orders for feveral bodies of troops to meet him about the middle of July; and in a few days after, he arrived with his whole army, confifting of twelve thousand foot and three thoufand horse, in fight of the enemy's camp.

The army of count Lewis being much inferior both in discipline and number, that general quickly perceived the necessity of quitting his present fituation. He retired, however, in good order, and with very little loss, till he arrived

At the same time that what is above related was transacted at Brussels, orders were given at Madrid for putting to death the baron of Montigny, brother to count Horn, who had been fent by the dutchess of Parma along with the marquis of Mons (who died some months before) to present the petition of the confederates. Bentivoglio.

VIII.

1568.

at the town of Gemmingen, where he pitched BOOK his camp in a place that appeared almost impregnable, Behind him lay the village of Gemmingen; on his left, the river Ems, by which he could be supplied with provisions from Embden, and other places; and on his right, a plain which he fortified with trenches and redoubts: but that which formed the chief strength of his fituation was, that the enemy could not approach him but by marching in defile along the dike of the river. This dike was ten miles in length, with the river on the one fide, and a morals on the other. Having planted a battery of cannon upon it, Lewis intended to open the dike and lay the morafs under water. And in this encampment, he hoped it would not be difficult for him to keep the enemy at bay, till his brother should begin his operations; when he did not doubt that the duke of Alva would find it necessary to retire.

Alva was aware of Lewis's intention, and of and defeats the danger with which any confiderable delay must be attended. With the utmost expedition he brought forward his best veteran troops, and arrived at the very time when the Flemings were beginning to break down the dike. Count Lewis and the other nobility were themselves employed at the work. When the enemy appeared, they betook themselves hastily to arms, but they were foon obliged to yield to the superior force of the Spaniards, and to retire behind the battery above mentioned. Here Lewis expected to maintain his

ground by the help of his artillery; but the Ger-

VIII.

mans in his army, to the number of feven thoufand, having been disappointed of their pay for fome weeks, and believing that Lewis had money in his possession which he had delayed giving them from his dread of their defertion, refolved to embrace the present opportunity to extort from him a compliance with their demands. They rose tumultuously, and threatened that they would not fight unless he immediately paid their arrears. Intelligence of this fedition was carried by spies or deferters to the duke of Alva, who perceived that now was the time to make an attempt upon the battery. He ordered a part of his army to enter the morafs; through which, as it was the fummer season, and Lewis had been disappointed in his defign of laying the ground under water, the Spaniards found their way easier than they expected. They arrived in time to attack the enemy in flank, whilft the rest of the army, without shrinking, marched up to the battery in front, and made a furious affault upon it fword In hand. The Flemish exiles, with count Lewis at their head, defended themselves for some time with great bravery, but being deferted by the Germans, they were at length compelled to retreat. The Spaniards entered the camp along with them. The Germans, overwhelmed with terror, made little resistance; and, as a just punishment of their fedition at fo critical a period, great numbers of them were put to the fword. Almost as many

were swallowed up in attempting to swim across

to

th

W

CC

ha

ag

bu

ha

up

 G_1

ec .

a 1

flax

of t

through a mutiny of the Ger-

VIII.

the river, as fell by the hands of the enemy. On BOOK the fide of the Spaniards only eighty men were killed; but of the Germans and the Flemish exiles, between fix and feven thousand perished, including those who were drowned. Count Lewis. after having attempted in vain to rally his scattered troops, escaped in a small boat to the opposite side of the river; and soon afterwards fet out with the earl of Hoogstraten for Germany, to join the prince of Orange 25.

The duke of Alva went from the field of battle to the city of Groningen, and from thence to Utrecht and Amsterdam; carrying on inquiries in these places against the protestants, and punishing with rigor all who were fuspected to have been concerned in the late diforders. He would gladly have spent more time in this employment, so agreeable to the native cruelty of his disposition; but he was informed that the prince of Orange had begun to put his troops in motion, and was upon his march from Treves to the province of Guelderland, or Brabant. recept rate of Christian !

,

e

n

d

15

10

10

t.

n.

de

ir

of '

ny

ofs

Before William lest Germany he published a manifesto, in which he explained the motives which induced him to have recourse to arms. "There was no other expedient left," he faid, a by which he could fave his countrymen from flavery and ruing and to attempt this, he thought, was the indispensable duty of every citizen; espe-

labored in this reload: both from the profit " Strada, Bentivoglio, and Grimestone's General History principal solubitants in the Nether charles and he

BOOK VIFE. P\$68.

eially of one who, like him, had enjoyed the highest dignities of the state. The king, he hoped, would ere long be delivered from those Spanish counsellors by whom he had been led aftray; but, in the mean time, he did not think it incumbent apon any inhabitant of the Low Countries to vield obedience to the king in contradiction to the laws. For Philip did not hold the same unlimited authority in the Netherlands, as in his other dominions. His right to obedience subfifted only whilft he maintained the rights of the people; and, by the constitutions of the provinces, it was expressly provided, that if the fovereign should attempt to violate any of the fundamental laws, the people mould in that case be absolved from their alleconcerned to the late delerters. He would soulis

In this manifelto the prince thought proper to make it known, that he had changed his fentiments in religion; and was now convinced, that the opinions of the protestants were more conformable than those of the Romish church, to the great rule of Christian faith, the facred writings.

d

at

PI

vi

th

po

. 3.0

the

w

cal

and

du

by

bre

army.

William's army, including horse and foot, did not exceed twenty - thousand; and the duke of Alva's, after being joined by a reinforcement which he received at this time from Spain, was equal in number, and much better furnished with military stores and provisions. The prince was fenfible of the great difadvantage under which he labored in this respect; but from the pressing invitations which he received from many of the principal inhabitants in the Netherlands; and from

the repeated representations which were made to him of the universal hatred with which the people were animated against the governor, he hoped that, as foon as his army should appear, there would be an infurrection in his favor, or that fome of the principal cities would open their gates to receive him.

BOOK VIII. 1568.

He passed the Rhine without opposition in the Alva in end of August, a little above Cologn; and then his passage turning to the left, he advanced towards Aix over the la Chapelle. About this time the duke of Alva arrived at Maestricht. The prince directed his march first towards Liege; but being disappointed in the hopes which he had conceived, of that city declaring in his favor, he turned his course northwards, with an intention to pass the Maese whereever he should find it fordable. Alva's whole attention was employed to prevent him from putting his defign in execution, and with this view he planted strong guards along the banks of the river, and kept his army as nearly opposite as possible to the enemy. whileteng halland ada give

021

d

of ıt

15

h

15 ıé

g

ne rtf

At last, however, after several marches and countermarches, William effected his paffage in the night, opposite to a town called Stochem, where the duke believed it to have been impracticable. But the feafon had been remarkably dry; and the prince on this occasion imitated the conduct of Julius Cæfar in his paffage of the Ligeris, by placing his cavalry a little above the ford, to break the force of the fream befored six due ving

parentable . sen T 4 he from

¥ 0 0 K VIII. When Alva was informed next morning of what had happened, he could not at first believe it, and scornfully asked the officer who brought the intelligence, Whether he imagined that the

enemy had wings?

The prince of Orange endeavoured to persuade his troops, as soon as they had crossed the river, to march directly against the Spaniards; who, if this request had been complied with, would have been sound very ill-prepared for desence; but the Germans, who, unfortunately for themselves, as well as for the cause in which they were engaged, never yielded due obedience to their commander, resused to advance till they should have a night's resressment; and thereby lost the only opportunity which the duke of Alva ever gave them, of compelling him to sight.

ir

th

to

De

en

ac

an

his

fui

w

fki

tur

tw

Alva declines

On the next day, when they were led forward to the Spanish camp to offer battle, they found it so strongly fortified with intrenchments and redoubts, that no attempt could be made upon it with the smallest probability of success. Chiappino Vitelli, an officer of high reputation, was of opinion, that the duke ought not to have declined an engagement, as the enemy were fatigued with their passage of the river, and had not yet made choice of a proper place for their camp, to which they could retire after battle; besides, that it was of the highest consequence, he imagined, to give an early check to their presumption, in order to prevent the fortified towns from declaring in their fayor.

But Alva had already formed his plan, to BOOK which he was unalterably determined to adhere. He confidered that he had a great deal more at stake than the prince of Orange, and that a tives. defeat would be attended not only with the loss of his army, but the greatest part of the provinces. He was acquainted too with the narrowness of William's finances, and knew that he must encounter the most insurmountable difficulties in supporting so numerous an army for any confiderable time; especially as the winter season was fast approaching, when, unless he should get possession of some of the great towns, it would be impossible for him to remain in the Netherlands.

With this view, as he suspected that the prince His prudent intended to lead his army into Brabant, he strengthened the garrifons of Tillemont, Louvain, and Bruffels; and when William directed his march towards Tongres, the duke drew his troops fo near that town, as made it impossible for the enemy to approach. Whichever way the prince of Orange turned his course, the duke of Alva accompanied him; marching fometimes behind, and fometimes on his flank; always straitening his quarters, and rendering it difficult for him to furnish his army with forage and provisions; while he intrenched his own forces with so much skill, that the prince fought in vain for an opportunity of bringing on an engagement.

£.

1

•

e

.

In this fituation frequent skirmishes between the Skirmishes, two armies were unavoidable, and in thefe the

VIII. 1568.

BOOK advantage fell fometimes on the one fide and fometimes on the other; but each commander made fuch judicious movements, chose his ground with fo much skill, and exerted such an equal degree of vigilance and attention, as effectually prevented his antagonist from obtaining any confiderable advantage over him.

The only fuccess which the duke of Alva could boalt of, was at the river Geete; where, having attacked the rear-guard of the enemy's army, he killed fome, and put the rest to flight.

t

a

h

CO

hu

wl

to

It be

wo

Th

bee bab

fort

tiou

The prince of Orange had the same ground of triumph in an action at Quesnoy; where, having come up with a detachment confisting of ten companies of German catholics, eight of Spaniards, and three troops of light armed infantry, he put them to rout, and took ample vengeance for the loss he had sustained at Geete ".

He was on his march at that time to meet the Sieur de Genlis, who had been fent to him by the prince of Condé, with a reinforcement of troops; which fully compensated all his losses in Brabant, white some some substance and bearing exacted to

The prince disband his army.

But the causes already mentioned began to is obliged to operate. The prince had been cruelly disappointed of the greatest part of the money which had been promised him. The dread which the Flemings entertained of the Spanish forces, and the prudent precautions which had been taken by the duke of Alva, had prevented William's friends

the chie fituation frequent for miles between the Salmanes.

two armies were unavoidable, and sunsuit the

from making any effort in his behalf. His army had been often pinched for provisions. They now despaired of getting possession of any of the great towns, and they trembled at the thoughts of passing the winter in the open fields. The Germans began to desert in great numbers, and had often, before this time, shown themselves refractory and disobedient. For these reasons, the prince found it necessary to disband them; after having given them all the satisfaction in his power, by paying a part of their arrears, and giving security to their leaders for the rest on his lordship of Montsort and the principality of Orange 37.

After these disasters, the prince, accompanied by his brother count Lewis, went to France, and conducted thither between a thousand and twelve hundred horse, to the afsistance of the Calvinists.

,

ie

y

of

in

a

to

-00

ad

m-

he

he

nds

W/1

Such was the conclusion of the first attempt which the prince of Orange and his brother made, to deliver the Netherlands from the Spanish yoke. It must occur to every reader, that if they had begun their operations and entered the provinces at the same time, the issue of their enterprise would probably have been extremely different. The duke of Alva would, in that case, have been obliged to divide his forces, and have probably been overpowered by numbers. But unfortunately count Lewis, who was more expeditious in making his levies than the prince of

N 1111/ 1568.

²⁷ Thuanus, Meursius, Albanus, p. 19. Meteren, p. 79.

B O O K VIII. 1568. Orange, did not possess a fund sufficient to maintain them without employment, and was obliged to enter upon action before his brother was prepared to support him. And to the same cause may be ascribed both the prince's delay in putting his troops in motion, and the necessity to which he was reduced of breaking up his camp.

the proper found is a passage to account their passage at a term of the contract of the contra

Description of Areles Western Strong and Section of Section Se

charten thefore all information prince, an emparied by the bestper count herview were to be under and concerns as bondered and excellent

township and the southboard and bediend

which the process of Orange and his brother made;

It must each to seem well or the three land begun their operations and entered the crowings

at the fembration, the officer of their enterprise weald appealed between twen their difference

pi

m

CO

ce

pa

Fe

for

the

The dance of chive would a in the cries chave ever been easier

hably been evergeneed by muchers that un-

tions to melting his levies than the prioce of

"Thusaner, Meuriles, Albeites, p. co. Miccoen, p. co.

HIST ORY

OF THE REIGN OF

PHILIP THE SECOND,

KING OF SPAIN.

BOOK IX.

difficulty and the state of the

21

36

W

1

od

PART L

WHILE Philip's bigotry, joined to his def- BOOK potic and arbitrary conduct, had engaged him in war with his subjects in the Netherlands, the same
The war in
causes produced a similar effect in the province of Granada. Granada; where the Moors, who had long yielded a tame submission to the crown of Spain, were provoked by the tyranny of the prefent government, to throw off their allegiance and have recourse to arms. This people, who, during several History of centuries, had maintained possession of the greatest the Mores part of Spain, were at last totally subdued by Ferdinand the catholic, in the year one thousand four hundred and ninety-two. But although their government was abolished at that time, the people themselves remained; and were permitted to enjoy

BOOK IX. 1568. not only their possessions, dress, and customs, but even their religion, as in the time of their native kings. And the politic Ferdinand scrupled not to swear solemnly, to observe this condition, in hopes of being able afterwards to devise some efficacious means of reconciling them to the Christian faith.

h

P

ec

no

T

CO

ne

dr

of

the

of

ren

tini

cru

and

are

nor

con

ftill

faith val

I

Being disappointed in his expectation, and finding, after a trial of feveral years, that the instructions of his priests were not likely to prove effectual; he refolved, without regard to the oath which he had fworn, to employ force in order to accomplish his design. He pretended, that the citizens of Granada had forfeited their title to his fulfilling the terms of peace, by an insurrection, into which some of them had been betrayed through the violent administration of cardinal Ximenes; and, on this pretence, he ordered fentence of death to be pronounced against them, and declared, that unless they would renounce their religion, it should be instantly carried into execution. By this expedient he compelled fifty thousand of the inhabitants of the city of Granada, most of whom had no concern in the infurrection, to profess themselves converts to Christianity. The inhabitants of the country, and of the smaller towns, being highly exasperated by the violent treatment of their countrymen, and dreading that they themselves would quickly experience the fame injustice, began to prepare for refistance. But before they had time to put themselves in a posture of

defence, Ferdinand, who was no less provident and BOOK active, than falle and faithless, came upon them with a numerous army, and after taking one of their towns, of which he put all the inhabitants to the fword, he foon obliged the rest to lay down their arms. Upon their paying him a fum of money, he permitted a certain number to transport themselves to Africa. But the greater part were compelled to remain in the kingdom, and to submit to be baptized. They were still however strongly attached to the Mahometan superstition, and although they generally conformed to the rites of the Romish church, they could not on every occasion conceal their attachment. The inquisitors were perpetually prying into their conduct; great numbers of them were condemned and burnt as heretics; and many thousands. dreading the like fate, fled over to Barbary.

r

it

e

n

n

af

r-

ft

e-

T-

n-

ne

n-

es

he

ly

eir

res

ae-

ey

of

Representations were often transmitted to court of the defolation that was thus produced; but these representations either did not reach the ear of Ferdinand, or they were difregarded. No remedy was ever applied, and the inquisitors continued to exercise without control their wonted cruelty and oppression.

During the latter part of the reign of Ferdinand, and the whole of that of Charles, the Moors are feldom mentioned by the Spanish historians; nor do these writers give us any other information concerning them for half a century, than that they ftill retained their ancient aversion to the Christian faith. But the ecclefiaftics, foon after Philip's arrival in Spain, taking encouragement from that

IX. 1568. IX.

1568:

bigoted zeal with which they knew their prince to be fo strongly actuated, revived their old complaints against that unhappy people, and made repeated representations of their obstinate and in-

curable infidelity.

" They are Christians, " said Guerrero, archbishop of Granada, " in name only, but Mahometans in their hearts. They come to hear mass on festival days, only in order to avoid the penalties which they would otherwife incur. They work on these days with their doors shut, and feast and carouse on Fridays. They present their children to be baptized; but no sooner do they reach their own houses, than they wash them with warm water. circumcife them, and give them Moorish names. They consent to be married in the churches, because the law requires it; but when they return home, they clothe themselves in a Moorish dress. and celebrate their nuptials with dances, fongs, and other species of music which are in use only among the Moors. "

This reprefentation was well calculated to make impression on the superstitious spirit of the king. But the archbishop knew, that political considerations were likely to have as much weight with him as those of a religious nature; and therefore he fubjoined, " That the Morescoes held a treasonable correspondence with the Turks and Corsairs, and were in the practice of carrying off the children of Christians, and either selling them for slaves, or fending them to Barbary, where they were brought up in the religion of Mahomet," Whether there

te

aı

ci

tra

qu

the

cv

ene

pla

em

hitl

fron

cou

con

1X.

1568.

was any truth in the latter part of this accusa- BOOK tion, does not appear with convincing evidence; but, confidering the near affinity between the Morescoes and the African Moors in respect of religion, manners, language, and descent, together with the alienation from the Spanish government, which the cruelties exercifed against them by the inquisition, and their exclusion from all offices of truft, must have carried to the greatest height, it is not furprifing that Philip's apprehenfions were alarmed, and that he thought it neceffary to make provision against the danger which feemed to threaten him.

His first step was to strip the Morescoes of their Philip dic arms; and for this purpose he sent, on different arms them, pretences, several regiments of Castilians to quarter among them, by whom a great quantity of arms of all kinds were feized; but as their fuspicions were perpetually awake, they had penetrated his defign, and concealed a confiderable quantity .

n

S

n

a-

0

n

,

S.

e-

m

S

be

ıg

g.

ra-

im

he

ole

nd

of

OF

ht

ero

9

This discovery of Philip's disposition towards them served to alienate their affections more than ever from his government, and at the same time encouraged the inquifitors to multiply their complaints, and to urge at court the necessity of employing more efficacious measures than had hitherto been adopted. The king himself was far from being averse to comply with the violent counsels that were given him; and when upon confulting a theologian of the name of Oraduy,

Ferreras, ann. 1562.

VOL. I.

that ecclefiaftic, in the true spirit of a Spanish BOOK inquifitor, quoted to him the proverb, that "of IX. 1568. enemies, the fewer, the better." Philip was highly

pleased with his reply.

Mis edia against them.

Having therefore refolved, if possible, to extirpate from his dominions the private as well as the public exercise of Mahometanism, and to wash it out with the blood of its votaries, rather than fuffer it to remain, he appointed a felect number of ecclefiaftics to confider of the proper means by which his defign might be accomplished; and agreeably to the advice of these men he foon afterwards published an edict which contained the following prohibitions, and denounced death in case of disobedience: "That henceforth the Morescoes shall lay aside their native language, dress, and peculiar customs, and in future adopt those of the inhabitants of Castile. That they shall no longer take Moorish names or surnames, but such as are generally used in Spain. That they shall bear none of those symbols about them by which the disciples of Mahomet are distinguished. That they fhall discontinue the use of their baths, which shall be immediately destroyed. That their women shall not, as hitherto, appear in veils; that no perfons shall marry without a dispensation from the ordinary; that none shall remove from one place to another without permission; and that they shall on no occasion wear arms, or keep them in their possession. "

Ť

f

li

tl

tl

Te

ti

b

ti

th

yi

m

w

aff

be

W

pe

no

me

M

dif

The exercise of the Mahometan religion having been prohibited under the severest penalties by -

it

f

d

n

e

n

£

.

of

n.

25

ar

ne

y

Ile

all

er.

he

ce

all

eir

ng

by

1968.

former princes, no mention was made of it in BOOK the edict; but the Morescoes readily perceived the defign and tendency of the present regulations. and confidered, that as they must render the fecret practice of their religion infinitely more difficult than formerly, they must infallibly prove ere long the cause of its extirpation. Even although they had not been apprehensive of any such serious confequence, it could not be expected they would tamely submit to those affronting rules which were now prescribed them. Men are often more powerfully attached to the external forms and modes of life, than to things that are the most effential to their happiness. With this attachment the zeal of the Morescoes for their religion coincided. Their refentment, on account of the innumerable cruelties which had been so long exercised against them by the inquisition, added force to these incentives, and prompted them to refolve to expose themselves to the last extremities, rather than yield obedience to the edict that was now promulgated. But as they were conscious of their weakness, and could not depend upon receiving affistance from any foreign power, they agreed, before they should take up arms, to make trial, whether they could by folicitation and entreaty perfuade the king to revoke his edict.

"Their drefs," they represented, " had furely Their remon. no relation to any religion, whether the Maho- france. metan or the Christian, fince the Mahometans in. Marocco, Fez, Tunis, and Turkey, dreffed very differently from one another; while the drefs of

V 2

1X. the Turks: and to require them all to purchase Castilian habits would subject great numbers of them to an expense which they were unable to defray. It was from modesty alone their women wore veils; a practice which obtained in many places of Castile, as well as in Granada. Their music and dances were used on days of sestivity, only as amusements; they had not the most remote connexion with religion, and they had been regarded as innocent by prelates the most distin-

guished for their sanctity and zeal.

"Their baths were used for the purpose of cleanliness only; those of the men were separate from those of the women; and it was not in the power of those Christians to whom the care of them was committed, to alledge, that either the former or the latter had been ever applied to any use repugnant either to decency or the catholic religion. And with regard to their language, as it was difficult to conceive how the Arabic could contain any thing contrary to Christianity, so it was utterly impossible for them at once to lay aside the use of it, since great numbers among them were too far advanced in life to be able to learn a new language; and in feveral parts of the country there was no other tongue spoken but the Arabic, nor any means established by which the Castilian could be acquired." They concluded with professions of loyalty to the king, and with reminding him, that in his foreign wars they had given him many proofs of their attachment and fidelity.

n

il

t

fi

A

A

aı

th

in

1568.

The Morescoes had not access, it should seem, BOOK to deliver this remonstrance to Philip himself; but it was presented to him by Deza the chancellor of Granada, who was feconded by Don John Henriquez, Don Antonio de Toledo, the prior of Leon, and the marquis of Mondejar, captain general of the province. This last mentioned nobleman spared no pains to divert Philip from his purpose, by representing, that from his knowledge of the Morescoes he was convinced, that an open rebellion would be the confequence of carrying the edict into execution. But the king having formed his refolution after mature deliberation, and by the advice of fuch counfellors as he most esteemed, lent a deaf ear to all the reprefentations that were made to him, and gave orders to Mondejar immediately to fet out for Granada, in order to make preparations for employing force in case he should find it necessary. his coid and he had not find distant

The Morescoes were no sooner informed of the ill fuccess of their petition, than they began to meditate a revolt; and the leading men among them having met privately in Cadiar, a town fituated in the entrance of the mountains of Alpuxara, they dispatched ambaffadors to Fez, Algiers, and Conftantinople, to folicit affiftance; and at the same time spread their emissaries over the province, in order to prepare the minds of the inhabitants. Total me albitanto la von en le con

e

f

n

y

11

y,

e-

en

n-

of

ate

he

of

he

ny

olic

as

uld

it

lay

ong to

the

the

the

ded

with had

and

The people almost every where, except in Their infer. those places where they were overawed by the redion.

₩ Q Q K IX. 1568. Spanish garrison, obeyed with alacrity the invitation which they received to affert their liberty; and in a little time the whole region of Alpuxara, which contains a space of seventeen leagues in length and ten in breadth, comprehending many villages and many thousand inhabitants, was up in arms. A reinforcement of several hundred Turks, besides a quantity of military stores, arrived from Asrica, and the Morescoes flattered themselves with the hopes that much more powerful affistance would ere long be sent them by the Sultan.

They elect a Ring.

Their leaders in the mean time held another affembly, in which they elected for their king Don Ferdinand de Valor, a young man of four or five-and-twenty, descended from their ancient princes, and in some measure qualified, by his intrepid courage and activity, for the dangerous pre - eminence to which he was now exalted. Having affumed the name of Aben - Humeya. which had been that of his progenitors, he was invested with the enligns of royalty, with all the forms and ceremonies which were anciently practised at the election of the Moorish kings. He then entered upon the exercise of his new authority. appointed his ministers and officers, and fent orders to all the chiefs who were not prefent in the affembly, to hold themselves ready to act on the thortest notice. The bear towns would are the bear

n

aş

ar

no

pu

vi

th.

ki

nil

an

10

QU

by

Their attempte. His first and principal object was to get possess on Granada, sin which he doubted

thois places where they were overgain and the

n

n

h

d

er

g

ır

at

is

15

d.

1,

as

ne

C-

Ie

у,

rs

he

he

ef-

ed

not of being able to defend himself till the Turkish fuccours should arrive. Nor was it without some reason that he entertained hopes of succeeding in an attempt on this important city. His party had hitherto concealed their machinations with the most profound and faithful secrecy. Their several meetings had been held on pretences which deceived the penetration of the Spaniards, and their military preparations had been carried on chiefly among the mountains of Alpuxara. The marquis of Mondejar, indeed, notwithstanding these precautions, had conceived a suspicion of their designs, and had represented to Philip the necessity of fending him a much more powerful army than was at present under his command. But there subfifted at this time a violent jealoufy between that nobleman and Deza the chancellor, which arose from a competition concerning the rights of their respective offices. Deza, prompted by his animofity against the marquis, endeavoured to discredit his account of the hostile intentions of the Moors, and to perfuade the king that there was in reality no danger of a revolt, and that the edict lately published might be sufficiently enforced by a vigorous exercise of the civil power alone; but that Mondejar was desirous that a war should be kindled, because he expected that the whole administration of it would be committed to himself; and the count of Tendilla his fon.

Philip, though naturally provident and fuspicious, and more inclined to fear than hope, was by his counsellors, who were Deza's friends, led

BOOK 1X. 1568: BOOK

IX. 1568.

to believe his representation of the matter, rather than that of the marquis. And thus the march of the troops for which Mondejar had applied was delayed, and the garrison of Granada suffered to continue fo weak, that had it not been for an accident which could not be foreseen, that city would have fallen into the hands of the Morescoes. Aben-Humeva having held a fecret correspondence with the inhabitants of the town of Albaicin, which communicates with the city of Granada, and may be confidered as a part of it, gave orders about the end of December to Aben-Farax, one of his principal officers, to march thither with a body of between fix and feven thousand men. Had these troops reached Albaicin at the time expected, the inhabitants would have joined them. and thereby have made up an army by which the garrison must have been overpowered; but by a fall of fnow upon a neighbouring mountain, over which they were obliged to pass, they were all prevented from advancing except about one hundred and fifty. With these Aben Farax himself entered Albaicin in the middle of the night; and if he could have prevailed upon the inhabitants to take arms and join him, he might fill have made himself master of the town; but though well affected to his cause, they were deterred from declaring in his favor by observing how small a number of troops he had brought along with him; fo that after having continued in the place for fome hours, he was obliged, before the approach of day, to make his escape to the mountain where

in

bi

in tri

th

W

m

mo ful

ate

do

nu

his army had been stopt. Philip's eyes were then opened, with regard to the contradictory informations which he had received, and he immediately issued orders for the march of those troops for which the marquis of Mondejar had applied.

BOOK 1X. 1568.

Aben-Humeya in the mean time was employed Their hostiliin fortifying the narrow passes which led into the country of Alpuxara: after which he, with one body of troops, and Aben-Farax with another. went from place to place, exhorting or compelling the Morescoes to revolt; destroying the altars and images in the churches, which they converted into mosques; and putting to death, in the most barbarous manner, all the priests and other Christians who refused to embrace the Mahometan religion.

5

e

n,

C

a

er

H

n-

elf

d

ts

ve

gh

m

n;

or

ch

ere

In order to check their progress, the marquis They submit of Mondejar set out from Granada as soon as he to the marhad collected a fufficient number of troops for his dejar. intended enterprise. The Morescoes disputed with him for some time the entrance into the mountains; but they were unable to withstand long the bold intrepid efforts of the Spanish infantry. Mondejar triumphed over them at every pass; put many of them to the fword; took a great number of prifoners, and at last obliged Aben - Humeya to fly with the shattered remains of his army, to the more inaccessible parts of the mountains. In a few months almost the whole region of Alpuxara was fubdued. The people, being every where intimidated by the rapidity of Mondejar's progress, laid down their arms, and either came to him in numerous bodies, or fent deputies, to fue for peace.

BOOK 1X.

This he readily granted, on condition of their yield. ing obedience in future to the king's authority; and he at the same time gave them protection against (what they had but too much reason to dread) the rapine and violence of the Spanish soldiers, The marquis De los Velez, who commanded a body of troops in the neighbourhood of Almeria. was no less successful in dislodging the Morescoes, from fome frong holds near the fea coafts, where they had fortified themselves with a view to favor the descent of the Moors and Turks. And now the marquis of Mondejar, believing the war to be almost entirely extinguished, and that Aben-Humeya must either soon surrender or make his escape out of the kingdom, sent intelligence of his success to Philip, and defired that a part of the troops might be recalled. He at the fame time recommended the treating gently both such of the Morescoes as had submitted, and such of them as had been taken prisoners. But unfortunately this nobleman's enemies at court had much greater influence than his friends; and Philip was of himfelf much more inclined to harshness and severity. than to lenity and mercy. Without regard to Mondejar's reprefentations, a royal mandate was immediately dispatched, commanding all the prifoners above eleven years of age, without diffinction of fex or condition, to be fold for flaves '.

q

ſe

tl

ai

th

hi

fti

fei

to

en

Sp

lef

ing

tip

The effect of this barbarous treatment, fays a Spanish historian (Ferreras), was, that great numbers of the Morescoe women languished in slavery for a little time, and then funk under their calamities.

This barbarous treatment of their countrymen revived in the minds of fuch of the Morescoes as had submitted, all their wonted abhorrence of the Spanish yoke; and soon afterwards they themselves

36

4

•

5,

a

9

W

0

1

is

of

of

10

10

as

is

er

n-

y,

to

as

ri-

IC+

ifh

the

ie,

B O O K 1X. 1568.

were treated with equal inhumanity. Whether Philip's exchequer was in reality drained at this time by his late expensive armaments in the Mediterranean, and his war in the Netherlands, or whether his ministers only pretended this to be the case, in order to gratify their malignity against Mondejar, does not sufficiently appear; but whatever was the cause, the arrears due to the troops were so great, that the marquis of Mondejar was unable to discharge them. The plual confequence of the ill-payment of an army quickly followed. The general loft his authority. and the foldiers, and several of the officers, deferted their stations, and spread themselves over the country; plundering, and even butchering and carrying off into flavery great numbers of those Morescoes for whose security he had pledged his faith. Mondejar feems to have exerted himfelf strenuously to put a stop to these enormities, by fending out such of his troops as he could trust, to restrain or chastise the delinquents. But his endeavours were in a great measure fruitless. The Spaniards still continued to embrace every opportunity of indulging their rapacity; and afterwards left their standards, and went off to the neighbouring provinces with their prey died on his rogal

The Morescoes, highly exasperated by the multiplied oppressions which they suffered, repented BOOK 1568.

of their late fubmission; and, being now convinced that there was no fafety in trufting to any treaty with an enemy fo cruel and perfidious. they refumed their arms, took ample vengeance on scattered parties of the Spaniards, whom they furprised among the mountains, and again arranged themselves under the banners of their king. It happened about this time, that Aben-Humeya received from Africa a reinforcement of four hundred Turks; who, it was pretended, were foon to be followed by a powerful fleet and army. And thus the Morescoes were determined, partly by hope, and partly by vengeance and despair. to make a fecond trial of the fortune of war; the calamities attending which, they thought, could not exceed those which they had lately experienced in the time of peace.

The causes of this second revolt were very differently interpreted by the marquis of Mondejar's enemies and friends. By the former it was faid. " that this nobleman had erred egregiously, both in his manner of conducting the war, and in his treatment of the rebels, when they laid down their arms. For it was abfurd to expect that an enemy fo treacherous as the Morefcoes, would regard their engagements any longer than they found it necessary; and no less absurd to hope that fuch obstinate infidels would ever be sincere converts to the Christian faith. Their late facrilege, and the barbarous cruelties which they had exercifed against the priests, and other Christians, had called aloud for vengeance; and justice, as

le

fa

th

fe

well as found policy, had required, that they BOOK should all have been put to the sword, or fold for flaves."

1568

But the marquis, on the other hand, and his adherents, represented. That this deluded people had been chastised with sufficient severity, for enormities into which their leaders had betrayed them. That humanity, and a regard to the interest of the king, had prevented him from facrificing to revenge, the lives of fo many thousand useful fubjects, most of whom were innocent of the crimes that had been committed; and by whose destruction so great a part of the kingdom would have been rendered desolate: besides, that there was no reason to believe that the Morescoes would have violated their faith, if the troops could have been kept under proper discipline; which he had found it impossible to maintain, partly through the negligence of some of the king's ministers in making remittances for their pay; and partly through the pains which some persons in power had taken to ruin his authority.

Between these contradictory representations Philip Don John was at a loss to determine what measures to pursue. of Austria But at last, either because he himself, and most in chief of his counsellors, disapproved of Mondejar's lenity in fo eafily receiving the Morescoes into favor, or because he did not incline to subject that nobleman's enemies to the mortification of feeing him still continued in the fupreme command, he resolved to bestow it upon his natural brother

Don John of Austria.

d

t

a

IT

re

v.

y

r,

ne

ld

ri-15

ry

r's

d,

th his

vn

an

ple

ey

pe

ere

Cr1-

nad

ns.

as

1X.

This young prince, whose mother was a German, of the name of Blomberg, a native of Ratisbon, had been educated privately by Lewis Quixada, lord of Villagarcia; for whose son he had passed, till Philip's arrival in Spain in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-nine. Soon after this, Philip having, agreeably to his father's request, acknowledged Don John for his brother; had appointed him a household suitable to his rank, and bestowed the same attention on his education as on that of his own son.

Refembling his father in the gracefulness of his person, and in the courteousness of his manners, Don John discovered, from his youth, the love of arms; and gave many conspicuous proofs of those accomplishments by which he became afterwards one of the most illustrious personages of

V

C

d

n

W

th H

of

ac

A

kii

fat wh

reb

the age '.

But as at this time he was only about twenty-two years old, and did not possess any military experience, Philip, although he conferred upon him the title of commander in chief, forbade him to take the command of the troops into his own hands, and required, that in the whole management of the war he should conform to the opinion of certain counsellors whom he appointed to assist him. These were, the archbishop of Granada, Deza the president of the chancery, the duke de Sessa, the marquis of Mondejar, and Don Lewis de Requesens, the grand commendator of Castile, whom he named for Don John's lieutenant.

^{*} Strada , ann. 1578.

The war was now profecuted in different quar- BOOK ters at the fame time, and a greater number of troops employed than formerly. But the fuccels was not answerable to the expectations that had been formed. The Morefcoes discovered on many occasions that they were not destitute of valor, and in some rencounters they came off victorious.

,

d

n

19

5

ve

of

1

of

y-

fÿ

on

im

Vn

ge-

on

na

la .

de

wis

ile,

rely fubdued.

IX.

1568.

Don John, in the mean time, grown extremely The Morelimpatient under the restraints which had been coes are entiimposed on him, endeavoured to persuade the king to permit him to command the forces in person; and he at length obtained his request. After which, having got his army reinforced, he himself marched against the Morescoes on one fide, while Requesens and the marquis De los Velez attacked them on another. But the Morefcoes, undisciplined, incompletely armed, and disheartened by the disappointment of their hopes of affistance from the Turks and Moors, were not a match for fuch numerous regular forces as were now employed to reduce them, and their ruin was haftened by the diffensions of some of their leaders, and the treachery of others. Aben-Humeya was privately murdered by the friends of his wife, whose father he had put to death on account of his fecret practices with the Spaniards. Another chief, called Aben-Aboo, was elected king in his stead; and he too suffered the same fate, from the hands of fome of his officers, who hoped by this facrifice to atone for their rebellion. With the death of this leader, the

BOOK war, which had lasted almost two years, was

1568.

Neither Don John nor Requesens acquired any glory by their conduct in this war; nor did they preserve themselves free from that imputation of inhumanity and implacable revenge, which in this age was generally cast upon the Spaniards.

No other apology can be offered for the dreadful feverities which they exercifed, but that their conduct was conformable to the instructions given them by the king. For Philip had disapproved of the lenity with which the Morescoes had been treated by the marquis of Mondejar, and, while he listened only to the voice of superstition or resentment, forgot what every wise king will regard as the most facred maxim of his policy, that the strength and glory of a prince depend on the number and prosperity of his subjects.

But this bigoted monarch fet no bounds to his abhorrence of those who deviated, or whom he suspected of deviating, from the catholic faith. Agreeably to his instructions, great numbers of the Morescoes living peaceably in the plains of Granada, were, upon suspicion of their corresponding with the insurgents, put to death. All

In describing this war, the Spanish historians have descended to the most minute detail. But amidst the endless multiplicity of little events and incidents which they relate, there is almost no variety, and no display either of courage or conduct that can interest a reader in the perusal. This part of the Spanish history is besides rendered peculiarly disgusting by the numerous scenes of barbarous cruelty which it presents.

the

tl

g

0

th

th

th

to

in

V

CO

th

rai

Ba

ma

wa

as

ny

ey

of

nis

d-

eir

en

of

en

ile

or

re-

hat

the

his

he

th.

of

of

rre-

All

ave

the

play

r in

ides

of

e

the inhabitants of some villages and districts, men, women, and children, were extirpated. All the prisoners of both sexes were either executed or deprived of their liberty. And of those Morescoes who had resused to join in the rebellion, all but a few, without whom certain manufactures could not be carried on, were torn from their native homes, and transported into the interior provinces; where they were exposed to the injuries and insults of a haughty people, and many of them by their poverty reduced to a state of dependance on the Castilians, which differed little from the condition of such of their countrymen as had been sold for slaves.

Such was the conclusion of this war, during which, notwithstanding the great disparity between the contending parties, Philip was exposed to greater danger than at any other period of his reign. Had the Morescoes made themselves masters of the city of Granada, in their attempt on which they failed more through chance and accident. than misconduct or the want of strength; or had they prevailed with Selim the Turkish emperor, to interest himself in their behalf; several towns in Andalusia, and almost the whole kingdom of Valentia, which was mostly inhabited by Morescoes, would have joined in the revolt; and, in that case, so great an army might have been raised, as, with the affistance of the Moors in Barbary, would have furnished employment for many years to all the forces which the king, who was at the fame time engaged in war with his VOL. L.

BOOK 1X. BOOK 1X.

1568.

subjects in the Netherlands, could have collected to oppose them.

But fortunately for Philip, and perhaps for Christendom, the Sultan, was at this time intent upon profecuting the war of Cyprus against the Venetians, and from that war he could not be diverted, although Mahomet, his grand Vizier, and the wifest of all his courtiers, advised him earnestly to suspend the prosecution of it, and not to neglect the present happy opportunity of turning his arms against the king of Spain .

golde was the confidence of the war, dering resource arrived to resource the property between of being over a blad . What we become to and to tomen today were in their remails welcome really on any there do show one of the one fall of the photos po month minimal change. It is win and to restricted from growing specially became testing year ed an extraorate tentementary of the former by what reserves durant to be difficultied being the water remark to word a link of and and the day to be a second

en a set forestable allowance asignifications.

fe

fu n

fo ai

the way are a warming when it to make

the sound of the springing of the contract of the

tion from set of the state of the second section in

Thuanus, lib. xlviii. Ferreras, ann. 1568-9-70. Cabrera, lib. viii.

War with

PART II.

d

or nt

ne.

De

r .

m nd

of

0.

T was not long before Selim had reason to be BOOK forry that he had not listened to this advice, as Philip had no sooner completed the reduction of the Morescoes, than he entered into an alliance the Turks. against him with the republic of Venice, the pope and feveral others of the Italian states and princes. The, papal throne was filled at this time by the celebrated Pius the fifth, who by his merit had raifed himself from obscurity to the popedom, and though strongly tinctured with some of the vices which characterized the ecclefiaftics of that age. was endued with certain royal virtues which rendered him worthy of the exalted flation to which he had been advanced. Having been folicited by the Venetians, to employ his influence to procure affiftance from the christian princes against the Sultan, who in the time of peace, and in violation of a folemn treaty, had invaded the ifle of Cyprus, Pius readily confented to their request, and, with a zeal becoming the head of the church, espoused their cause.

His application however to most of the European monarchs was without effect. For besides that the feafon of crusades was now over, and that the most superstitious princes were, in that age, governed more by political views than religious zeal, he found almost all of them unable to grant the affistance which he folicited. The emperor Maximilian

BOOK IX. 1571.

had lately concluded a truce with the Sultan. which it was greatly his interest to maintain. The attention of the French king, who had been long in alliance with the Porte, was engroffed by those inveterate factions into which his kingdom was divided. Sebastian, king of Portugal was too young; and Sigismund of Poland too much worn out with the infirmities of age to engage in any foreign enterprise. Philip was the only great prince in Europe with whom Pius had reason to expect fuccess in his present application. That monarch's zeal, as well as his power, was greater than that of any other European prince, and from the fituation of his dominions, and the enmity which had long subsisted between him and the Turkish Sultans, he had no less reason to dread the increase of the Ottoman power, than either the pope or the Venetians.

Philip's league and the Venetians.

Without hesitation therefore he resolved to comwith the pope ply with the request that was now made to him. and readily entered into an alliance, by which he bound himself to pay one half of the expense of that powerful armament which it was judged necessary to employ, while the republic of Venice engaged to defray three-fourths of the other half. and the pope the remainder.

> The preparations stipulated were carried on with the utmost celerity and dispatch, and about the middle of September a fleet was ready to fail from Messina, confisting of upwards of two hundred and fifty ships of war, besides ships of burden, and, if we may believe the contemporary historians,

earrying near fifty thousand men; fourteen thoufand of whom were furnished by the princes and states of Italy.

e

g

[e

as

0

ra.

y

ce

ct

n's

at

ia-

ad

ul-

ife

ór

200

m-

m,

he

nfe

ed

ice

alf,

ith

the

om

red

en.

ans,

BOOK IX. 1571.

The chief command of this mighty armament was given to Don John of Austria, for whom the title of Generalissimo was invented on this occasion. The Grand Commendator Requesens was appointed his lieutenant, and under him were the marquis de Santa-Croce, Doria, M. Antony Colonna, commander of the pope's gallies, and Sebastian Veniero, who commanded those of the Venetians.

The aged pontiff, overjoyed to observe that his negociations had been attended with fo great fuccess, indulged the most sanguine hopes with regard to the iffue of the war; and, as if he had received a revelation concerning it from Heaven, he exhorted Don John to embrace the first opportunity of engaging with the enemy, over whom he affured him he would obtain a complete victory. He fent him at the same time a consecrated standard, and a number of ecclefiaftics to officiate in facred things on board the ships; and ordered a fast and jubilee to be proclaimed, with an absolution from their fins, to all who should acquit themselves with honor against the infidels.

Selim, on the other hand, exerted himself ftre- Selim's prepanuously in providing against so great a danger as rations. now threatened to overwhelm him; and although a part of his troops were still employed in reducing Cyprus, he was able, through the great refources which he possessed, to equip a fleet still more

1X. 1571. numerous than that of the christian allies. Hali, to whom the chief command of it was given, arrived on the western coast of Greece about the time when Don John set sail from Sicily; and the two sleets came in sight of each other, with a resolution not to decline sighting, on the seventh of October, near the gulph of Lepanto.

The battle of Lepanto.

The battle was begun by the two admirals. and their example was followed by all the other commanders, as fast as the wind, or the general orders which they had received, would permit them to advance. Between Don John and the Basha the engagement was bloody and obstinate. After cannonading one another for fome time, they came to close fight, and grappled with each other. The Spanish soldiers thrice boarded the enemy's ship. and were thrice repulled with great flaughter. But at last Don John having received a reinforcement of two hundred men from the marguis of Santa-Croce, the Turks were overpowered. Hali himself was killed, and all on board were either put to the fword or taken prisoners. The crescent of Mahomet was then taken down, and the standard of the cross erected in its stead; after which, Don John, in order to intimidate the enemy, gave orders to have the head of the Turkish admiral fixed upon a long pole, which was fastened to the topmast; and shouts were sent from ship to ship of triumph and victory. a mind mile transition on leans its and

The contending parties were in the mean time engaged in every quarter in furious combat with each other, fighting hand to hand, as on a field

to

ed

en

ets

ot

er,

ls.

ier

ral

nit

(ha

ter

me

he

ip,

But

ent

ita-

felf

the

met

rofs in

to

pon

aft:

nph

ime

vith

field

of battle, and employing not only guns and BOOK muskets, but arrows, pikes, javelins, and all the other, ancient as well as modern, weapons of war. Both Turks and Christians gave the most striking displays of prowess and intrepidity. Great numbers fell on both fides, and the fea for feveral miles was tinged with blood, and covered with mangled limbs and carcafes. At last the christians were almost every where victorious. The christian slaves, by whom the Turkish gallies were rowed, took courage from the fuccess with which the arms of the allies were attended, broke loofe from their chains, and contributed not a little to fix the victory; while great numbers of the Spanish and Italian galleyflaves, prompted by the hopes of recovering their liberty, having obtained permission from their officers, boarded and attacked the enemy with irrefistible fury, and displayed a contempt of danger with which nothing but despair, or the abhorrence of flavery, could have inspired them. The Turks were at the fame time greatly disheartened by the loss of their admiral; and being tempted by the hopes of making their escape upon a coast inhabited by their fellow-subjects, many of them ran their ships ashore, and left them an easy prey to the enemy.

The christian fleet was much better manned Causes of the than the Turkish, and the foldiers, having been a fhorter time at fea, were more fresh and vigorous. They were infinitely better furnished with mails and helmets, and made much more use of firearms than the enemy, many of whom were armed

IX. 1571.

ook only with bows and arrows, the wounds inflicted by which were feldom mortal. The prows of the Turkish gallies were likewise more open and defenceles; and the wind, which at first was favorable, changed suddenly against them, and greatly facilitated the motions of the christian sleet. From these causes, added to the fortunate bravery of Don John, seconded by the prudent and intrepid conduct of Requesens, Santa-Croce, Colonna, and above all of Veniero, Barbarigo, and other noble Venetians, the allies gained the most memorable victory of which we read in the history of modern times.

The lofs ap both fides.

of the special

It was not indeed obtained without considerable loss. Near ten thousand of the christians were killed in the engagement, or died afterwards of their wounds. Among these was the Venetian Proyeditor, Barbarigo, a nobleman equally celebrated for his wisdom, his valor, and his moderation. His death was deeply lamented by the allies, and proved an irreparable misfortune to the common cause. But to compensate for these losses, near fifteen thousand christians were delivered from captivity; and of the Turks, above five-andtwenty thousand were killed, and ten thousand taken prisoners. A hundred and thirty of their ships fell into the enemy's hands, and all the rest were either funk or battered to pieces, or burnt, except between thirty and forty with which Ulucciali, the famous corfair, escaped to Constantinople, through his superior skill in navigation and his knowledge of the feas.

d

d

as

d

t,

ry

e-

a,

er

r-

of

er-

re

of

an

le-

lc-

he

he

es,

m

id-

nd

eir

eft

nt,

IC-

10-

nd

This victory, gained over the implacable enemy BOOK of Christendom, spread universal joy throughout all Europe; and Don John, to whom as commander in chief it was principally ascribed, was celebrated every where as the greatest hero of the age. No person had more reason to rejoice than Philip, yet he received the messenger with a cold indifference; which his contemporaries were not inclined to attribute to his moderation fo much as to that jealoufy of his brother's fame, of which he gave afterwards a more convincing proof. " Don John, ' faid he, "has gained the victory, but he hazarded too much: he might have lost it. " The pope's joy on this occasion was more fincere. When he received the news, he cried out, in the words of facred writ, " There was a man fent from God whose name was John."

But the fruits of this fignal victory were not The allies proportional to the joy which it excited. The fe-return home. veral admirals differed widely from one another with regard to the measures proper to be taken in the further profecution of the war. Although Don John had been honored with the extraordinary title of Generalissimo, yet according to the treaty. of alliance no matter of importance could be determined without the confent of the other commanders. He would have failed immediately after the battle for the Dardanelles, to intercept the remains of the Turkish fleet, and to block up the communication between Constantinople and the Mediterranean, but the Venetians and other members of the council of war refused to agree to this

BOOK proposal. Other enterprises were afterwards pro-1x. poled, and rejected; nor could they fix on any one common measure, but that of returning home, to repair the damage which had been fostained, and to prepare for refuming their operations in the fpring.

Don John.

Embaffy of . Not long after Don John's arrival at Meffina, the Greeks to the christians in Albania and Macedonia, filled with admiration of his character, and believing that it must be long before the Turks could recover from the blow which they had received, fent an embaffy to make him an offer of the fovereignty over them, and to affure him, that, if he would come to their affiftance with a fleet and army, they would flake off the Turkish yoke, and sacrifice their lives and fortunes in his fervice.

> Don John, whose ruling passion was ambition, would gladly have accepted this tempting offer, but was obliged to inform the ambassadors, that before he could comply with their request, the king must be consulted, and his consent obtained. He accordingly fent immediate notice to his brother of the proposal that had been made to him. And Philip, whether prompted by jealoufy, as was generally believed, or by motives of prudence and policy, as he gave out, put an end at once to any hopes which Don John might have conceived, by telling him, that at present all thoughts of such an enterprise must be laid aside, lest the Venetians should take the alarm, and abandon the confederacy. This, it is not improbable, would have happened, fince the Venetians had no less reason to dread the

neighbourhood of the Spaniards than of the Turks; and had besides a claim themselves to a part of those territories, to the sovereignty of which Don John afpired.

BOOK IX. 1571.

In the mean time Ulucciali, whom Selim had Preparations made commander in chief of all his naval forces, exerted himself with extraordinary vigor and activity in fitting out a new fleet, to supply the place of that which had been ruined in the battle of Lepanto; and fuch at this time were the refources of the Turkish empire, that he was ready by the month of April to leave Constantinople, with more than two hundred gallies, besides a great number of other ships.

With this fleet he coasted along Negropont, the Morea, and Epirus; put the maritime towns into a posture of defence; chastifed with great severity many of those christians who had been concerned in the invitation given to Don John; and afterwards took his station at Modon in the Morea, with an intention to watch there the motions of

the enemy.

0-

ny

ic,

d,

he

a,

ith

it

mc

ffy

m,

eir

ke

ind

on ,

er,

be-

ing

He

rof

lip,

ally as

ich

m,

rife

ake

nis,

ince

the

He had full leifure to finish all the preparations Inactivity of which he judged to be necessary. The allies dif- the allies. puted long with one another concerning the plan of their future operations; and at last when, through the inactivity which their diffensions had occasioned, it was become necessary for them to drop their scheme of conquest in Greece and Africa, and to go a second time in quest of the Turkish fleet, Philip having conceived a suspicion that the court of France had, in order to gratify

.guanash

Piedmont, or the Netherlands, sent instructions to Don John to delay for some time longer his departure from Messina. At this place the Spanish fleet remained till after the massacre of St. Bartholomew; when Philip, being delivered from his anxiety with regard to the intentions of the French court, gave his brother permission to join the

Venetians, and to act in concert with them in profecuting the war against the Turks.

They at last fet fail for Greece.

But it was the last day of August before the allies could effectuate a junction of their forces; and it was the middle of September before they came in fight of the enemy. Immediately after their arrival on the Grecian coast. Ulucciali drew out his fleet, as if he intended to offer battle; but no fooner had he made a fingle discharge of his artillery, in the way of bravado or defiance, than he retired under the fortifications of Modon. These he had strengthened in such a manner, as to render it extremely dangerous for the allies to approach; and he refolved to lie in wait there for fome favorable opportunity of attacking them, or at least to keep his fleet in readiness to harass and interrupt them, in case they should attempt a defcent.

Uluceiali declines fighting. Don John called a council of his general officers to confider of the measures proper to be purfued in case the Turkish admiral should persist in his resolution to decline fighting. It was thought impracticable to force their way into the harbour of Modon; and therefore it was resolved to put the forces on shore, and to beliege the town by land. But from this attempt they were foon deterred, by the information which they received from some troops fent to reconnoitre the strength of the place; which was fo completely fortified, that they could not expect to reduce it before the

approach of winter.

in

ns

de-

ifb.

10-

his

ch he

in

the

es;

ney fter

ew

but

his han

efe

ren-

ap-

for

or

and

de-

offi-

pur-

t in

ight

oour

put

It was next agreed to attempt the reduction of Siege of Na. Navarino, which is another town on the western coast of the Morea, not many miles from Modon. The conduct of this enterprise was committed to Alexander Farnese, prince of Parma, who some years afterwards filled all Europe with his renown, and acquired the character of one of the greatest generals of this, or perhaps of any other age. But the present undertaking did not afford him an opportunity of displaying those superior talents for which he is fo justly celebrated. The garrison was powerfully reinforced by detachments fent from Modon; and fo numerous an army was drawn together from the neighbouring towns, and fent by Ulucciali to attack the befiegers, that Farnele, after battering the ramparts for several days, was obliged to raise the siege, and put his forces on board the fleet; which foon afterwards fet fail for Messina.

Some months before this time the league had Pius. fuffered an irreparable loss, by the death of the pope; whose successor Gregory the XIIIth had neither the same zeal nor the same influence and authority. Gregory, however, entered readily into his predecessor's views, and showed himself willing

BOOK IX. 1572.

B O O K IX. 1572.

The Venetians make peace with the Turks. to pursue the plan which Pius had adopted. And Philip, who was now entirely free from his apprehensions of a French invasion, had resolved to exert himself more than ever in the prosecution of the war. But the Venetians having been highly distaisstied with the inactivity of the Spanish fleet in the preceding summer; and finding that after a trial of two years they had, notwithstanding the victory of Lepanto, derived little advantage from the war, to compensate for the great expense which it had cost them, they listened to proposals made them by the French ambassador, and through his intercession concluded a separate peace with the Sultan.

The pope and Don John expressed their indignation against the Venetians on this occasion without reserve. But Philip thought it beneath his dignity to discover either uneasiness or resentment; and when intelligence of the peace was brought him, he answered coolly, that he had entered into the league at the desire of the sovereign pontiff; and that, although the Venetians had thought proper to abandon it, he would still employ his fleet and army as before, for the attainment of those important ends, the humbling of the Insidels, and the security of Christendom, with a view to which the consederacy had been formed.

Agreeably to this resolution, he sent orders to Don John, to Doria, and the marquis of Santa Croce, to employ their utmost diligence in repairing and augmenting the fleet, and to hold it ready for entering upon action in the spring. These

nd

ap-

to

of

hly

ter

the

nfe

als

igh

lig-

ith-

his

nt; ght

nto

iff :

oro-

leet

im-

the

the

ders inta air-

ady

hefe

orders were punctually executed. Ulucciali, with the Turkish fleet, advanced as far as Prevesa in Epi. rus. But neither he nor the Spanish commanders thought it expedient to try their force in a general engagement. At length Ulucciali, after reinforcing the garrisons of the maritime towns, dismissed the corfairs who had come to his affistance, and about the end of summer set sail for Constantinople. After, which Don John, agreeably to his instructions from the king, passed over to Africa, with an intention to undertake the reduction of Tunis; carrying with him for this purpose a fleet of two thousand fail, having twenty thousand foot on board, besides four hundred light horse, seven hundred pioneers, and a numerous train of heavy artillery.

Tunis was at this time in the hands of the Turks, commanded by Heder Basha, whom Selim had lately sent to govern the town and kingdom. Heder, seized with consternation at the approach of the Spanish fleet, left Tunis with his troops and a great number of the inhabitants, and Don John took possession of the place, without meeting with the smallest opposition.

Philip had instructed his brother, when he sent him on this expedition, to destroy Tunis, and to strengthen the fortifications of the isle and fortress of Goletta? But instead of complying with these

⁷ The Goletta, which is fituated at the entrance of the bay of Tunis, had been in the hands of the Spaniards ever fince it was conquered by the emperor Charles.

B O O K IX. 1572. October 7. BOOK 1X. 1572. instructions, Don John resolved to sortify the town more strongly than ever; and having laid the soundations of a new fort, or citadel, he treated all the inhabitants who remained with lenity and indulgence; and engaged many of those who had sled, to return and submit to the Spanish government; after which he carried back his fleet to Sicily.

He foon discovered his intention in acting a part fo contrary to the orders of the king. His fuccess in an enterprise in which the late emperor had failed, though entirely owing to the cowardice of the Turkish governor, had inflamed his ambition; and he had conceived the hopes that his brother would be perfuaded to grant him the title and dignity of king of Tunis, in compensation for the fovereignty of Greece, which he had prevented him from accepting. The pope, it is faid, had disapproved of Philip's resolution to demolish Tunis; and had fecretly encouraged Don John to venture upon disobeying him; from an opinion that the erecting a christian kingdom in Barbary, would prove the most effectual means of extirpating the piratical states. It is certain that Gregory warmly folicited Philip to confer upon his brother the fovereignty of his new conquest, and represented that all Christendom, and especially Spain and Italy, would from thence derive the most substantial advantages.

Philip was conscious that, notwithstanding his copious resources, it was beyond his power, while the war in the Netherlands subsisted, to effectuate the establishment of a new kingdom in opposition

BOOK

IX.

1972.

to fo potent an enemy as the Turkish Sultan. And he had defired the fortifications of Tunis to be difmantled, in order to fave the expense of a numerous garrison, which would be necessary for its defence. He did not, however, express great refentment against his brother for counteracting his instructions. But when the pope interceded with him to confer the fovereignty on Don John, he replied, " That, although no person could be more fincerely concerned than himself, for his brother's honor and interest; yet there was much ground to doubt, whether either the one or the other would be advanced by his complying with the pope's request; and that he could not grant it, till he should know whether he was able to maintain the acquifition which had been made, against the formidable armament the Sultan was preparing for its recovery." The prudence of this reply, when ther it did, or did not proceed from some secret motive of jealoufy against his brother, was fully justified by the issue, the same and the

In the fummer following, Selim fent Ulucciali Tunis and against Tunis, with a fleet consisting of three hun- the Goletta dred ships, having about forty thousand troops on the Turks, board, under the command of his fon-in-law Sinan Balha. The new fort which Don John had begun to build, was not yet complete. Nor was the garrison which he had left strong enough to hold out long against so great a force. Don John labored with much zeal and anxiety in affembling the Spanish fleet, with an intention to raise the fiege, but he was detained for feveral weeks, first

VOL. L

wn

ın-

he

ul-

ed.

nt;

art

ess

ail-

of

n;

her

ig-

fo-

im

ap-

115;

ure

the

uld

the

nly

ve-

hat

ly.

ad-

his

hile

ate

ion

0

BOOK 1X. 2572.

hes slow T

19 5 12 1 1

the Turks.

in one harbour, and afterwards in another, by tempestuous weather and contrary winds. The Turks in the mean time being powerfully seconded by many thousand Moors, under the governor of Tripoli and the viceroy of Algiers, pushed forward their operations at the same time against Tunis and the Goletta. The garrisons defended themselves long with the utmost bravery; but at last they were overpowered by numbers, and both the Goletta and the town were taken by assault.

Don John was affected in the most sensible manner by this difaster; which showed him the folly of his late prefumption, and extinguished those flattering hopes which he had long indulged of attaining some regal or fovereign establishment. And his mortification on this occasion was the greater, because, after his most vigorous efforts, the Spanish fleet was still too weak to enable him to take vengeance on the enemy. Philip; for the same reason; dreaded that the Turkish commanders would purfue their conquests, and either attack his other posfessions in Africa, or attempt a descent in Naples or Sicily; and it is probable that his apprehensions would have proved but too well founded, had not Selim died about this time, and left his throne to his fon Amurath the Third; who devoted the beginning of his reign to the arts of peace 1 at any

Prince Cantemir's Hist. of the Ottoman Empire. Antonio Herrera; & Ferreras in hoc anno. Miniana, lib. vit.

the Span in fleet, with an intention to raile the

hoges obus he was detained for feveral weeks a fact:

h

th

re

ed

tir

which had not been sent bushed to A. How and he are HIS TORY

by

The nd-

nor

for-

Tu-

ded t at

oth

ult.

an-

of

Hat-

ain-

and

ter.

nich

ge-

on.

our-

-log

ples

ons

not

to

be-

BUR

onio

and

till

god

with the many that the last the hard problem OF THE REIGN OF individual diplayed, but into our and or o enough

PHILIP THE SECOND,

dinanded Alva dinance to Comme control KING OF SPAIN, and bone Holos thought and Lemman rates on I visual a

a firstly a one lost to the own where a crown BOOK X. The supporting

celebrated on the ory to the of reflered the communicity a following the leaves and DURING the course of the transactions related BOOK in the preceding book, a variety of important events happened in the Netherlands, which require a more circumstantial narration. Netherlands.

In opposing the prince of Orange and count Lewis of Nassau, it was confessed even by the duke of Alva's enemies, that he acted with the most confummate prudence; and if his conduct afterwards had been equally prudent, he might, notwithstanding the general odium which his tyranny had excited against him, have preserved the Netherlands in obedience to his authority. For if such of the people as were disaffected to his government remained quiet while the prince of Orange was at hand to favor their attempts, it cannot be supposed, that, after all their hopes of affiftance were extinguished, they would have ever dared to dispute

324 HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

X. people, at the present period, seem to have been fo entirely broken, and their minds so deeply impressed with awe and terror, that nothing could have inspired them with the dourage which they afterwards displayed, but insolence and oppression

carried to the most enormous height.

Alva's vanity and arrogance.

As foon as the army of the prince of Orange was disbanded, Alva dismissed his German cavalry, and having distributed the greatest part of his infantry into winter quarters, he fet out himself with the remainder for Bruffels; where, after a triumphant entry, he ordered his victory to be celebrated with every species of rejoicing. He then commanded a folemn thankfgiving for the fuccels which had attended his arms to be observed through all the provinces; and ordered a statue of himself to be formed in brass, and medals to be struck, which, while they served to perpetuate the memory of his exploits, gave proof of a degree of vanity and arrogance, which put his friends to the bluff, and made the world unwilling to vield him that praise which his vigor and abilities would have procured him . One of the first acts

In one of the medals he was represented riding in a triumphal chariot, with a Victory behind him putting a crown upon his head. In his right hand he held a fword, to fignify that he had conquered count Lewis by open force; and in the left, an Ægis, to express that wisdom of which he had availed himself against the prince of Orange: and as a farther emblem of his wisdom, the chariot was drawn by owls, which in the ancient heathen superstition were facred to Minerva.

of his administration after his return to Bruffels, BOOK was to determine the fate of the prisoners whom he had taken during the campaign; and all fuch of them as were inhabitants of the Netherlands were treated as rebels, and put to death.

py

een

ply

uld

hey

ion

was

ry,

his

felf

ra

be

He

luc-

ved

e of

be

ate

de-

nds

to

ties

acts

in a

ng a

ord .

open

that

rince

the

then

A strict inquiry was fet on foot, to discover His tyranny those who had, either by word or deed, whilst the war subsisted, shown their inclinations favorable to the prince of Orange. And as the iffue of the war had remained uncertain, and fortune had

But his statue, which was made at this time, and afterwards placed in the citadel of Antwerp, afforded a still more striking proof of his vanity and arrogance. It was the workmanship of Jockeling, a German artist, the most celebrated sculptor of the age. The governor was represented trampling under his feet the figure of a monster, having certain emblematical figns in different parts, which denoted the petition which had been presented to the dutchess of Parma. the compromise, and the infurrection and tumults which enfued. The base of the work was a square pillar of marble, containing on one fide the artift's name, and on the other three fides an encomium of the duke of Alva; who is there faid to have extinguished herefy and rebellion, to have faved the church from destruction, and restored justice and tranquillity to the Netherlands. This monument of Alva's vanity was far from being acceptable to the king; it was a subject of derision among his enemies at the court of Spain; and in the Flemings, it excited the highest resentment and indignation *.

It appears from Grotius, that about this time the duke made feveral vieful regulations with regard to trade, the coin, and the liberty of the press; but they failed in promoting the purposes for which they were intended, and even the memory of them was foon effaced by the violence

of the measures which he afterwards pursued.

Bentivoglio, p. 86. Van Loon, tom. i. p. 135. Strada, p. 250

BOOK X.

fometimes favored one fide and fometimes another, many persons had unwarily given vent both to their hopes and to their fears; little fuspecting that they were to be called to fo rigorous an account for unguarded expressions, uttered among their friends and neighbours, which were now imputed to them as the most atrocious crimes. The people of the Low Countries had long enjoyed the privilege of not being tried by any judges, but those of the city or district to which they belonged: and no citizen could be put to death who had not confessed his crime. No regard was paid to either of these privileges. Persons of all ranks were hurried from the places of their residence, and carried to fo great a distance as made it impossible for them to disprove the accusations brought against them, however groundless. Great numbers were seized on bare suspicion; many suffered death on the flightest evidence; and others were harassed with profecutions, by which they were reduced to the utmost poverty and distress .

The negligence which the judges discovered in the sentences which they passed against the unhappy victims delivered over to them by the inquisitors, and in the warrants which they signed for their execution, would be incredible, if the many instances recorded by the contemporary historians did not put it beyond all doubt. An order was issued at this time for executing several of the prisoners who had been condemned. In the list of their names the name of one man was inserted whose cause had not been tried, and he too was led to execution. Some time after, the judges gave orders to have this man brought before them for his trial. They were informed, that, in obedience to their some command, he had already suffered death; and proof was at the same time laid before them of his innocency.

i

m

in-

th

ng

ac-

ng

m-

he

he

ut

d;

ot

ner

ur-

ied

em

m,

ed

the

ith

the

len-

red

ich , if

ans

at

had

of and

ges

his

heir

roof

cy.

The iniquity and unrelenting cruelty exercised BOOK by the inquisitors diffused an universal terror over all the provinces. Not only the protestants, but The Nelikewise all who had ever shown themselves attach therlands ed to the liberty of their country, faw, that nothing deferted by less would satisfy the governor than their utter ruin. bers of the It would not avail them, they perceived, to con- people. ceal their fentiments, nor even to disclaim them; fince many of those who had done so, had been punished with death and confiscation; and had received no other favor from the judges, but that of having fuffered by the fword or halter, instead of being committed to the flames. Determined by these considerations, great numbers of both fexes abandoned their habitations, and withdrew into foreign parts. We ought not perhaps to believe what fome historians relate, that no less than a hundred thousand houses were forsaken by the inhabitants. It is however certain that feveral of the principal cities were fenfibly thinner, and fome whole villages and smaller towns were rendered almost desolate. Many of those who left the Netherlands. went over to England, where they were well received by Elizabeth. And as in that country they enjoyed the free exercise of their religion, they fixed their residence in it; and amply rewarded the English for the protection afforded them, by introducing among that people various branches

Most of the judges expressed on this occasion great uneasiness; but Vargas, the Spanish lawyer, observed, that what had happened, if rightly considered, ought not to give them much concern, fince it was happy for the man's foul that he died innocent.

X.

.0970

BOOK of manufacture, with which they had before been

x. unacquainted.

1568.

The Low-Countries suffered extremely from this emigration of the inhabitants. But the duke of Alva, far from being deterred by this consideration from the prosecution of his plan, was at pains to prevent the return of the exiles, and even prohibited from returning all such of their friends as had gone to visit them, by publishing an edict, setting forth, that they should be considered as holding intercourse with rebels, and should be liable to the punishment due to those who gave affishance to the enemies of the king.

The governor's vanity was flattered about this time, by an embaffy which came from the pope, to present him a consecrated hat and sword. This sort of present, which used to be bestowed only upon princes, was conferred on the duke of Alva, as an illustrious defender of the popish faith; and it contributed to confirm him in the pursuit of those sanguinary measures, which had procured him such

ir

fo

n

C

tie

fo

m

th

Sc

an

no

of

of

off

cha

a distinguished honor.

The reft entirely fubdued. But there was now almost no occasion for employing measures of this kind in his government of the Netherlands. All persons who had rendered themselves obnoxious to his displeasure, had either been put to death, or had gone into a voluntary banishment; while those who remained had shown themselves ready to yield an implicit and entire obedience to his will. The new bishops, the decrees of the council of Trent, the rites and ceremonies of the Romish church, were received and established throughout all the provinces.

n f

-

d

٢

d

e

5

, S

y

it

e h

1of-

d

er

y

n

re

e-

e-

d

This fuccess of the duke of Alva's arms and BOOK counsels gave great uneafiness to some of the neighbouring princes, and particularly to the queen of England. That wife princess, had from the beginning of her reign beheld with anxiety the growing power of the Spanish monarchy. She knew how much Philip was inclined to diffurb her government, and was fensible of the advantage which the vicinity of his dominions in the Netherlands afforded him, for carrying any scheme which he might form against her into execution; especially at the prefent period, when, instead of the limited prerogative which he had hitherto enjoyed in these provinces, he had acquired an absolute or despotic power, and established a military force, which was formidable to the neighbouring nations, as well as to the people whom it had been employed to fubdue. Prompted by these confiderations, Elizabeth had granted her protection to the Flemish exiles; and, if we may credit some historians, she had given secret assistance in money to the prince of Orange. The fituation of her affairs at home, where she was disquieted by the machinations of the partifans of the queen of Scots, rendered it inexpedient for her to come to an open breach with the Spanish monarch; but notwithstanding this she had resolved to lay hold of the first proper opportunity that should occur of counteracting his defigns,

It was not long before an occasion of this kind offered, which she readily embraced. Some merchants of Genoa having engaged to transmit certain Philip.

X. 1568. Anxiety of the Queen of England.

She feizes money belonging to BOOK X.

fums of money for Philip's use into the Netherlands, had put four hundred thousand crowns on board five small vessels, which, being attacked on their way to Antwerp by privateers belonging to the prince of Condé, were obliged to take shelter in the harbours of Plymouth and Southampton. The Spanish ambassador at the court of London immediately applied for a fafe-conduct, that he might fend the money by the nearest way to the Low-Countries; and at first Elizabeth seemed willing to grant his request; but afterwards she ordered the ambassador to be told, that, as she understood that the money was the property of the Italian merchants, she had resolved to detain it for some time in her own hands, and would take care that the owners should not have any reason to complain. The ambaffador endeavoured to make it appear, that the money belonged to the king his mafter; and he was feconded in his applications for it by letters, addressed to the queen from the duke of Alva. Elizabeth lent a deaf ear to their remonstrances, and discovered plainly, that she had refolved to keep the money. Alva was not of a temper to bear patiently this infult. It was ever more agreeable to his nature, to conquer difficulties, than to attempt, by negociation, to elude them. Without regard to the treaties sublisting between the English and the Flemings, and without consulting either the States or council of the Netherlands, he ordered all the English merchants at Antwerp to be cast into prison, and their effects to be confiscated. He did not confider, or

F

q

th

in

th

C

W

ati

the

ye:

and

int

ind

acc

tha

r-

n

m

0

er

n.

n

re

10 il-

ed bo

m

ne at

nit

is

ns he

eir ad

fa

er

ul-

de

ng

th-

he

nts

eir or

he was not moved by the confideration, that the BOOK Flemings had at that time a much greater quantity of goods in England, than the English possessed in Flanders. Elizabeth had no reason therefore to be forry for what had happened. But the difpatched an ambassador to Philip, to complain of the injury done to her; and not receiving fatisfaction, she proceeded to make reprisals, and feized effects, belonging to Spanish and Flemish merchants, by which her fubjects were more than compensated for all the losses which they had fustained in Flanders. Alva came at last to perceive his error, and fent over Christopher Assonville to England, to negociate an agreement with the queen. Elizabeth, who took pleasure to mortify the pride of Alva, refused to admit Assonville into her presence, because he had not credentials from Philip. Alva, more enraged than ever by this affront, prohibited the people in the Low Countries from holding any commercial intercourse with the English; but at last, after various negociations, the matter was adjusted by treaty, and the trade put upon its former footing, in the year one thousand five hundred and seventy-four .

In the mean time Elizabeth gained her end, and did a most material prejudice to Philip's interest in the Netherlands. This prejudice was indeed much greater than she intended, and was accompanied with more important confequences than she could possibly foresee. Great arrears were

X. 1568.

Meteren, p. 80. Strada, p. 252. Bentivoglio, p. 80.

BOOK X. 1568. due to the Spanish troops, and Alva had contracted a considerable debt by building citadels. Philip's treasury, although the richest in Europe, was exhausted by the expensive wars in which he had been engaged against the Turcs and Moors; nor could he at present afford the money requisite for the maintenance of his forces in Flanders. In this situation, the governor sound it necessary to have recourse to the Flemings, whom he believed to be so thoroughly subdued, that they would not resuse to comply with any demand which he could make upon them.

The taxes of the 10th and 20th pennies.

The absurdity and folly, added to the oppresfion and tyranny, into which his arrogance, together with his ignorance of the interests of a commercial people, betrayed him on this occasion. may justly be regarded as the chief cause of all the difficulties which he afterwards encountered, and of all those astonishing exertions which the people made to free themselves from the Spanish yoke. It may appear furprifing, that the impoling of taxes, however burdensome, should have wrought more powerfully on their minds, than the cruel perfecutions which had been exercifed with fuch unrelenting fury on account of religion. But the reason is obvious. The persecutions extended only to a certain number of individuals; whereas the taxes affected all men alike, and must have proved the fource of universal and perpetual oppression.

ta

al

W

T

W

of

of

1.

th

OT

lo

the Sta

The people in the Low-Countries had in no period been accustomed to be taxed by their princes. The power of imposing taxes belonged, by the

n-

s.

e.

ne

5; te

In

to

ed

ld

he

ef-

ge-

m-

n,

all

ed,

the ifh

ing

ave

aan fed

on.

ded

reas

OV-

pe-

ces.

the

1.

constitution and constant practice, to the assembly of the States. And when the prince had occasion for money, he had been accustomed, from the earliest times, to petition the States for a supply, which they either granted or refused, as they were fatisfied or displeased with the reasons for demanding it. At certain periods, and particularly in the beginning of the present reign, they had carried their jealoufy of this important privilege so far, as to appoint commissioners of their own to receive the money from the people, and to fee it applied to the purposes for which it had been granted. The duke of Alva paid no greater regard to this than he had done to their other privileges. He refolved by his own authority, to establish such taxes as would not only supply his present necesfity, but ferve as a perpetual fund for defraying all the expenses of his government.

The manner in which these taxes were imposed was not more arbitrary, than the taxes themselves were oppressive. They were three in number. The first was a tax of one per cent. on all goods, whether moveable or immoveable. The fecond, of twenty per cent. to be paid annually, of all immoveable goods, or heritage. And the third. of ten per cent. of all moveable goods, to be paid in every fale. It was enacted, that the first of these taxes should be paid only once; but it was ordained, that the other two should continue as long as the public exigencies should require.

Intimation was made of thefe demands in Excite unithe name of the king, to an affembly of the verfal dis-States; and it is impossible to describe the astonish.

BOOK X. 1569.

1569.

BOOK ment which they excited. The deputies knew not what answer to return; and therefore defired time to consider of the governor's requisitions, and to transmit an account of them to their constituents. They were received every where with grief and indignation; and there was nothing to be heard but the bitterest lamentations over all the provinces.

tl

ti

re

fr

di

di

60

OI

ce

W

dil

at

ha

WC

Im

caf

the

" It was not enough, they complained, for the king to have stripped the country of infinite numbers of the people; to have filled the provinces with foreign foldiers, and to have wreathed the voke about the necks of the inhabitants, by garrifons and citadels; but they must likewise bear the charge of supporting those instruments of their oppression; and for this purpose, instead of the voluntary and moderate contributions which they had been wont to pay under former princes, be loaden for ever with the most violent and oppressive taxes. Notwithstanding the injustice with which they had been treated from the beginning of the governor's administration, yet, during his contest with the princes of Nassau, they had remained unshaken in their fidelity to the king, and even co-operated with his forces against the enemy; but it now appeared that their most implacable enemy was the king himself; who seemed to defire nothing so much, as to reduce them to a state of the most wretched flavery; and in order to accomplish an end fo cruel and inglorious, had fent among them the duke of Alva, whose conduct seemed rather as if he had come to extirpate the inhabitants, than to govern or protect them. But they had States; and it is augostible to defectbe the afternib.

and disputes.

already borne too much. It was time to show BOOK that they had not been insensible of the treatment which they had received, and that they were not altogether unworthy of their illustrious ancestors, to whose wisdom and valor they were indebted for those invaluable privileges, of which the king, and the odious instruments of his tyranny, now wanted to deprive them '."

When the States found that the new taxes were Opposition fo universally disagreeable to their constituents, fembly of they took courage, and represented their own fen- the States. timents concerning them to the governor. They reminded him of the disturbances which had arisen from an attempt to establish the tax of the hundredth penny, in the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-fix; when persons of all ranks discovered an irreconcileable aversion to it, not only on account of the exorbitancy of the tax itself, but because it reduced them to the disagreeable necessity of laying open their private affairs. There was still greater reason, they observed, for being diffatisfied with the other taxes; and especially that of the tenth part of moveable goods, to be paid at every fale. This was not only fuch a tax as had been never known in the Low-Countries; but would prove a burden which it would be utterly impossible to support. It would amount, in many cases, nearly to the value of the commodities themselves; since the same commodities were often transferred from one person to another, and from

X. 1569.

not

me

to

its.

ind

ard

ces.

the

ım-

ces the

rri-

the

op-

un-

had

den

xes. had

or's

the

in

ted

low

the

fo

nost

an

nem

ther

its,

had

Sta

il Bentivoglio, p. 82. nomez sint of rowing rl

BOOK X. 1569. him to a third, a fourth, a fifth, a fixth, before they came into the hands of the confumer. In woollen manufactures this was unavoidable; the wool was purchased by one set of manufacturers; the yarn by another; the cloth, before it was died, by a third; then it was fold to the merchant; by him, to the retailer; and by the retailer to his customers for use; and thus the tax proposed would amount to fix or feven tenths of the full value of the commodity. Several confequences, fatal to the prosperity of the people, would ensue. Foreigners would no longer purchase their manufactures, because they could not fell them at the usual prices. The manufacturers and merchants would fly from a country where they were fo grievously oppressed; and the Flemings would be obliged to have recourse to foreign nations for those commodities with which foreigners had hitherto been supplied by them. Thus the sources of their wealth would in a little time be dried up; and, as they would not have any manufactures of their own, fo they could not long possess the means of purchasing them from others. To these reasons they added another, taken from the great expense and difficulty with which the collection of the tax proposed must be attended. A multitude of taxgatherers must be employed; the people would still find it practicable, in numberless cases, to clude the tax; and the tranquillity of the provinces would be continually diffurbed with altercations and disputes.

-

h

H

21

re

to

W

pr

W

EO

th

CU

In answer to this remonstrance, Alva, with much

1569.

much ignorance and haughtiness, replied, that no BOOK thing could convince him that the taxes required would be so oppressive as had been represented: fince it was evident, that he demanded only one part of ten for the king, and left the remaining parts to the people. That in his town of Alva in Spain, the tax of the tenth penny was actually paid, and yielded him a yearly rent of between forty and fifty thousand ducats. That if such a revenue as he expected should arise from it in the Netherlands, he would deliver the people from all their other taxes. That he had often heard the late emperor complain of the difficulty of procuring money from his subjects in the Low Countries: and that, in order to obtain it, he had been con-Arained to grant them privileges greatly prejudicial to his authority. But at prefent there was no room for remonstrances. Great arreats were due to his troops; feveral new forts must be built without delay for the fecurity of the country; money for these purposes must be immediately procured, and he could not devise any more effectual means of railing it, than the taxes which

Such was the governor's reply to the affemble of the States; but being fenfible of the difficulties which attended his plan, he laid it before the council, and defired the counfelfors to confider of the most effectual method of carrying it into execution. There were some of them, who in

re

ln

he

5:

25

it;

115

ed

ull

fa-

ue.

-שר

he

nts

fo

be

for

hi-

ces

ip;

of

ans

ons

nfe

tax

tax-

uld

to

nces

ions

with

h

This confequence was to be diese.

Meteren , p.189. ... anoistogmi ogioleabred alet

VOL. I.

A cook order to ingratiate themselves with the duke, exhorted him to persist in his design. And these men advised him to endeavour first to gain over such of the provinces as had distinguished themselves by their loyalty; saying, that their example would soon be followed by the other provinces, who would dread incurring the imputation of

difaffection.

But most of the counsellors were of a contrary opinion, and particularly the president Viglius; a minister of long experience in the Netherlands. and of undoubted fidelity to the king. "The ob-" jections, " he faid, " which had been urged against the taxes were unanswerable; for there was the widest difference between the kingdom of Spain, and the Low Country provinces. The wealth of Spain confifted in the great extent of its territory and the fertility of its foil. It was divided from other kingdoms, either by inaccessible mountains, or by the ocean. It was complete within itself, and independent of any connexion with other countries. Whereas the Netherlands were of fuch small extent, as to be utterly infufficient to support the inhabitants. They were fituated in the heart of Europe, and had so many different nations bordering upon them, that, if trade were discouraged or oppressed, the manufacturers and merchants could eafily, and would certainly, transplant themselves, together with their arts, to the countries which lay around them. This confequence was to be dreaded from much less burdensome impositions than those that were

C

m

ec

de

eq

eff

Tt-

nen

ich

ves

ple

es,

of

ary

; a

ds.

ob-

ged

ere

of

he

its

id-

ble

etc

ion

nds

ıffi-

tu-

ny if

nu-

uld

ith

em.

ich

ere

X.

1569.

proposed; which were such as had never taken BOOK place in any commercial state, and to which, he was confident, the people of the Low Countries wuld never be persuaded to submit. I speak thus (continued he) prompted by a concern for the interest of the king, as well as by a regard to the prosperity of the Netherlands, for there is the greatest reason to apprehend, that if the governor fhall not depart from his resolution, trade will soon be reduced so low, that the people will be disabled from furnishing the supplies requisite for the purpoles of government ." by bald to book you sel

This speech of Viglius served rather to incense the duke of Alva than to convince him. Without regarding either the dignity of the speaker, or the strength of his arguments, he vouchfafed to make no other answer, but that, long before this time he had resolved upon the taxes in dispute, and had communicated his resolution to the counts Barlaimont and Noircharmes, before he came into the Low Countries. His purpose was unalterably fixed, and those who were friends to the king must. without any further altercation, exert their endeavours to bring the States to a compliance with The darks changle that he could not published

When the States found that the governor was equally deaf to the remonstrances of the president, as he had been to theirs, they began to dread the effects of his displeasure; and in order to sooth his resentment, they gave their consent to the tax of

where the governor, frated on a long throne, but

Meursii Auriacus, p. 35. Bentiyoglio, p. 83.

BOOK 4572

the hundredth penny; entreating him, at the fame time, to pass from the other taxes, and representing again, in the ftrongest terms, the ruinous confequences which would attend them. But he was ftill as inexorable as ever; although he condescended on this occasion to make a trial of some softer expedients, before he should have recourse to those of a more violent nature, which, in case of neceffity, he was determined to employ.

1570. An of Indemnity.

In the beginning of the year one thousand five hundred and fixty-eight, Philip, with the advice of the inquisitors at Madrid, had pronounced a general fentence against his subjects in the Netherlands, finding them obnoxious to justice, and depriving them of their fortunes, rights, and privileges. By this extraordinary fentence, which, from the nature of it, was incapable of being executed, he had kept this unhappy people in perpetual anxiety; but at last, believing their spirits to be thoroughly subdued, and dreading the utter desolation of the provinces, he had refolved to publish a general indemnity; and, fome months before the present period had transmitted it to the duke of Alva, together with a confirmation of it by the pope. The duke thought that he could not publish this indemnity at a more seasonable juncture; and he flattered himfelf, that it would ferve to conciliate the favor of the people, and make it easier for him to overcome their aversion to the taxes. It was first made public in the city of Antwerp: where the governor, feated on a lofty throne, furrounded with a degree of pomp which no former

lik tai

CO

the

fcr

p

it

or all VO of gar cor fho

late pri of p exp

as t effe Wit ne

18-

n

as

d-

er

fe

e-

ve

of

e-

S,

g

3y

a-

he

V :

ly

he

n-

nt

a,

e.

115

he

te

OF

It

P;

וד-

er

governor had affumed, ordered it to be read in the presence of a prodigious concourse of people, who had come from all quarters to hear it, full of the most anxious expectation. It was afterwards printed and dispersed over all the provinces. But it was extremely ill-calculated to promote the purpose defigned; and was clogged with such a number of exceptions, as tended rather to awaken the fears of the people, than to allay or remove them.

From the benefit of it were excluded, not only all the preachers of the reformed religion, but likewise all those who had ever lodged or entertained them in their houses; all who had been concerned in breaking the images, or in violating the monasteries and churches; all who had subfcribed the compromise, the petition of the nobles, or any other fuch bond of affociation; and laftly, all those who had given affistance, or shown favor, by word, deed, or writing, to the enemies of the king. Such were the exceptions that regarded individuals; and with respect to cities and communities, it was declared, that if any of them should be found to have been accessory to the late diforders, on the pretence of maintaining their privileges, the king referved to himfelf the power of punishing or forgiving them, as he should judge expedient.

It is not furprifing that an act of indemnity fuch How reas this, should have failed to produce any falutary effect. Persons of all ranks were highly offended. with that open declaration which it contained,

BOOK X. 3570.

BOOK

X. 1570. that they had forfeited their privileges. Besides, there were many who, although they themselves had ever been zealously attached to the Catholic religion, were connected by the most endearing ties with those who had forsaken it. Prompted by natural affection, gratitude, or humanity, they had done offices of kindness to their friends and neighbours, for which they were now made equally liable to punishment, as if they had been guilty of the most enormous crimes. Their minds therefore were thrown into a greater ferment than ever; and they were disposed to regard the pardon which had been proclaimed, rather as an insult added to the injuries which they had received, than as an act of elemency and mercy?

The duke of Alva considered it in a light extremely different, and soon afterwards resolved to make trial, whether it had produced the desired effect. With this view he ordered the several governors to inform the States of their respective provinces, that the situation of his affairs required an immediate and large supply, and that they must proceed to the raising of the tax of the tenth penny, without any surther remonstrance or delay. With the different provinces, however, he thought proper to employ very different means of persuasion. As the inhabitants of Namur, Artois, and Hainault, had, from the beginning, been extremely submissive to his will, he desired the counts Barlaimont and Noircharmes to acquaint them, that

d

it

W

w

lal

tic

fhe

fhe

in

fro

Ne

the

Meteren, p. 84. Bentivoglio, p. 85.

3 .

es

lic

ng

by

ey

nd

lly

lty

re-

er;

ch

led

as

ex-

to

red

go-

ive

red

ney

nth de-

he

of

DIS,

ex-

ints

hat

X.

1570.

he wished to obtain their consent to the tax, more BOOK for an example of obedience to the other provinces, than from any intention to levy it upon them; who had deserved so well of him by their fidelity. But he delivered his orders in a much more peremptory tone to the other provinces. He would take care, he faid, in levying the tax, to prevent the consequences which they apprehended might arise from it; and would abolish it, if he found it hurtful to their trade. In the mean time it was the will of the king that it should be imposed. The king had invested him with power to exact it; and he was unalterably determined to employ that power for the purpose for which it had been conferred. He concluded with reminding them of the guilt which they had contracted during the late commotions; and bid them efteem it a happiness that they were now allowed to atone for their folly, by giving a part of their substance, when the king might in justice have seized the hipow the us

By these promises and threats an affent was at The General last extorted; but it was given upon two conditions, that all the provinces, without exception, should agree to the taxes; and that the governor should, according to his promise, moderate them in such a manner, that no prejudice could arise from them to the trade or manufactures of the Netherlands. The only provinces which rejected these conditions were those of Utrecht and Brabant. And the former of these discovered, in the

HISTORY OF THE REIGN OF

progress of this affair, a firmness and intrepidity BOOK X. that deserves to be recorded.

1570. The resolute conduct of Utrecht.

Soon after the governor's orders were communicated to the States of Utrecht, they fent ambassadors the States of to represent, that having taken his demand under their most ferious consideration, they were unable to conceive how it could possibly be granted. The territory of Utrecht, they faid, was small; the inland parts of it were barren, and the other parts were preserved from the fury of the waters at an immense expense. Although they had but lately become subject to the house of Austria, yet, in order to raife the tributes imposed upon them by the late emperor and the present king, they had been obliged to contract a very large debt, which they had never been able to repay. During the late disturbances, they had suffered more than the other provinces; their city had been for faken by its most industrious inhabitants, and their trade, which was never great, almost annihilated. But as they knew the necessity of the governor's affairs, and were fensible how much they had been indebted to him for restoring tranquillity to the Netherlands, they were willing to affift him to the utmost extent of their ability, and would engage to pay him yearly a hundred thousand florins for six years; provided they were freed from all other burdens during that time.

i

to

ai

H

re

re

fo

fa

at

an

th

an

CO

This offer the governor rejected with fcorn and indignation. The States then fent another embaffy, to inform him, that they had confidered fully of what they could afford; they had flattered

ity

ni.

ors

ler

ble

he

the

her

ers

out

et.

by

ad

ich

the

the

its

ey

nd

to

ds.

ex-

ay

rs;

ens

nd

af-

lly

themselves that their offer would have met with a favorable acceptance; they were conscious of having given the strongest proof of an inclination to comply with his defire; but, whatever should be the consequence, they must now declare, that it was beyond their power to offer more. And in this declaration, the prefidents of the five churches concurred; protesting, that they could not agree to the taxes proposed, without incurring the cenfure of excommunication, which was denounced in the pope's bull', in cana Domini, not only against those who imposed taxes on the revenues of the church, but against those likewise who submitted to them. But the governor paid no greater regard to this protestation of the ecclesiastics, than to the remonstrances of the States. It provoked him exceedingly, to meet with fuch obstinate refistance from so inconsiderable a province as Utrecht. He had threatened to employ force, and he now refolved to put his threat in execution.

He began with sending to the city of Utrecht a regiment of infantry, consisting of two thousand four hundred men; who besides exacting the same number of storins a week for their pay, lived at free quarters in the houses of the inhabitants, and knowing the governor's design in placing them there, indulged themselves in every species of outrage. He summoned the magistrates of the city, and the States of the province, to appear before the council of tumults, to answer for their conduct in

BOOK X.

Published by Pius V. ann. 1568

воок

X.

the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-fix, when they ceded to the protestants one of the churches of the city for their religious affemblies. It did not avail them to alledge in their defence, that only a few individuals were concerned in this deed; that these few had acted with the best intention towards the king and the Catholic religion, and had made that concession; of which the whole city was now accused, in order to prevent the most unhappy confequences, which would otherwise have arisen from the intemperate zeal of the reformers. These defences made no impression on the duke, or on the council. And fentence was passed with very little hesitation, at the same time, against the ecclefiaftics, the nobles, and the feveral cities of the province. The ecclesiastics were deprived of their right of voting in the affembly of the States; the nobles were stript of all their honors and immunities; the cities of Utrecht, Amersfort, Wyck, and Rhenen, were declared to have forfeited their privileges; and, as Utrecht was supposed to have been more particularly guilty, it was enacted, that all the territory and revenues belonging to the city and corporations should be confiscated.

th

fh

of

pl do

eff

fo

aff

th

ha

the

ly

ma

ma

his

1

fpe

wa

tho

pro

The States were so far intimidated by this iniquitous sentence, and their patience so much exhausted by the oppressive rapacity of the soldiers, that they were induced to raise the offer which they had made of one hundred thousand florins, to one hundred and eighty thousand. But neither what they had already suffered, nor what they dreaded from the governor's resentment, could induce them to

x.

he

es.

at

d;

0-

ad

as

py

en

efe

on

ry

he

of

of

5;

m-

k,

eir

ve

d,

he

ui-

R-

at

ad

n-

ey m

to

1570.

vield their confent to the taxes of the tenth and BOOK twentieth penny. x.

This resolute conduct of the people of Utrecht was attended with the most important confequences. It annulled the obligation under which the other States had come, when they confented to the taxes, on condition that all the provinces should concur; and it confirmed the people in their resolution strenuously to oppose the levying of the taxes.

The governor was aware how difficult it would have been, in their present temper, to carry his plan into immediate execution; and although it does not appear that he ever entertained the remotest thoughts of dropping it, yet, as his occasions for money were extremely pressing, he called an affembly of the States to Bruffels, and demanded, that, besides the hundredth penny, to which they had formerly confented', they should, in place of the other taxes, pay two millions of guilders yearly, for fix years. The States endeavoured to make him fensible of the exorbitancy of this demand, but in vain. He gave them a month to consider of it; and at last, from their dread of his tyranny, they agreed to his request.

The prince of Orange was not an unconcerned conduct of spectator of these transactions. He had gone, as the prince was mentioned before, at the end of the year one thousand five hundred and fixty-eight, to join the protestants in France. He was present, and had a

This amounted to 4,000,000 of guilders.

BOOK X. 1170.

confiderable share in the several actions which pasfed between the Calvinists, and Catholics, at la Charité, Roche-la-ville, and Poitiers. But being too deeply interested in the affairs of the Netherlands to remain long at so great a distance from them, he had left his brother count Lewis to command the German forces in France; and having returned in September one thousand five hundred and fixty-nine, to his county of Nassau in Germany, he had been employed for some time in making preparations for trying his fortune once more

against the Spaniards.

In Germany he received particular intelligence of every thing that had happened in the Low-Countries fince his departure. He was informed how much the duke of Alva had increased the has tred which the people entertained against his perfon and government. He received the strongest affurances of their disposition to revolt; and was folicited by the catholics, as well as protestants, by those who still remained in the country, as well as those who had been forced to leave it, to take up arms in their defence. But he had not forgot the cause of the failure of his first attempt; and he resolved not to begin any military operations, nor even to levy forces, till he should be better provided than formerly with the means of their support.

P

th

m

F

fo

al

an

an

en

60

ers

an

We

the

kn

The exiles at fea acknowledge

Soon after Alva's arrival in the Netherlands, many of those who had left the country on achis authority, count of the perfecutions, had united together, and fitted out a great number of armed veffels, oaf-

la

ing

erom

m-

ing

red mai

ing

ore

nce

-wc

ned ha

per-

gelt

was

nts. vell

to

not

at-

ary uld

ans

ds .

ac-

er, els,

with which they feized all the Spanish ships which they could meet with on the Flemish or English coast. These adventurers had lately, through the violence of Alva's administration, received a great increase of number; and had been joined by many persons of rank, who had acquired an ascendant over them. They were all strongly attached to the prince of Orange, from whose wisdom alone they had any hopes of being restored to their native country; and they defired nothing so much as that he would undertake the direction of their affairs. They agreed therefore, as foon as it was proposed by their leaders, to receive commissions from him, and to pay a fifth part of the value of all their prizes to certain officers, to be appointed by him to receive it.

As their fleet was greatly superior to any which the duke of Alva possessed, they did incredible mischief to the Spanish, and sometimes too to the Flemish merchants; and if their prizes had been fold to advantage, the proportion which they allowed to the prince of Orange would have amounted to a considerable sum.

William had recourse, at the same time, to Intrigues of another method of improving his finances. He the prince of Orange. empowered fome of the inferior nobility to grant commissions in his name, to the protestant preachers, who went throughout the provinces in disguise. and procured contributions from all those who were disaffected either to the Catholic religion or the Spanish government. These men not only knew better to whom it was proper to apply, but,

BOOK X. 1570

fe

tl

iı

g

10

B

W

im

tei

of

no

be

affe

we

fee

inv

aga

 T_0

wit

laft

felf

B O O K X. by their piety and eloquence, they had greater influence over the people, than any other persons whom the prince could have employed. By their means too, he acquired a thorough knowledge of the disposition of the people, and formed a correspondence with many of the principal inhabitants, which contributed not a little to advance his views. These transactions were carried on chiefly in Holland and Zealand, where the reformed religion had made greater progress than in the southern provinces; and where, from the nature and fituation of the country, interfected by navigable rivers, canals, and branches of the fea, the people dreaded less, and were in reality less exposed to, the power of the Spaniards. It was in these provinces, formed both by nature and art to be the feat of liberty, that the prince of Orange had wifely refolved to make his first attempt to gain a footing in the Netherlands. And, accordingly, intrigues were formed, and plans concerted, between his agents and fome of the principal inhabitants, for delivering the maritime towns into the hands of the protestant exiles. Attempts were made to get possession of Enchuysen, and other cities in North Holland; but from different causes they proved abortive at this time, and were laid aside till fortune should be more propitious. The persons concerned in them had little reason, it may be thought, to flatter themselves with the hopes of secrecy; yet so univerfally odious was the Spanish government become, to the catholics as well as the reformers, that none, even of those by whose means the plots

of the Orange party were defeated, could refolve to give information of them to the governor. They were averse from gratifying a man whom they had fo much reason to detest; and abhorred the thoughts of that cruelty, which they knew would, in case of a discovery, be exercised against the guilty.

in-

ns

eir

of

re-

ts,

NS.

ol-

on

ro-

on

ca-

led

ver

m-

y,

to

Ve-

m-

ind

the

ant

of

id;

at

blu

in

to

fo

ent ers.

ots

The duke of Alva therefore remained entirely surprife of ignorant of all that passed; nor does it appear that the fort of he entertained the least suspicion of the machinations of his enemies, till the taking of the fort of Louvestein. This fort stands in the island called Bommel, which is formed by the Maese and the Waal; and, though weakly fortified, was of great importance on account of its situation. It was taken by surprise at this time, by Herman de Ryter, a native of Bois-le-Duc, who wished to fignalize himself by some gallant exploit in the service of the prince of Orange. He had carried with him no more than fifty men, and with this fmall number he hoped to be able to defend the fort till his affociates should arrive, but unfortunately they were prevented from advancing by some unforefeen accident; and in the mean time the fort was invested by a superior force, which had been fent against him, from Bois-le-Duc, by Roderigo de Toledo. The besieged defended themselves long with the most obstinate valor; but they were at last overpowered by numbers, and De Ryter himfelf was flain to sone by a bonne do and do and and

BOOK

X.

1571.

Meteren, p. 86. Bentivoglio, p. 87.

BOOK

X. 147t. Indignation of the duke of Alva,

The duke of Alva was greatly alarmed by this event. He confidered the cause more than the effect, and apprehended that this first enterprise of his enemies, which had been to eafily frustrated would ere long be followed by other attempts in different parts of the provinces. It excited in his fiery temper a degree of rage and indignation equal to his anxiety. And his referement was inflamed by the opposition which the people had made to his railing the tax of the hundredth penny; especially in the maritime provinces, where he had never been able either to levy that tax. or their proportion of the two millions of guilders, which the General States had confented to pay him yearly. This opposition might have opened his eyes, and shown him the necessity of embracing milder expedients, than he had hitherto employed; but instead of this, it served only to fix him in his first purpose of having recourse to open force and violence. And he was refolved, whatever should be the confequences, to compel the people to submit, not only to the tax of the hundredth penny, to which the States had given their consent, but likewise to that of the tenth and twentieth, to which they had refused it ". To give a color to his conduct, he afferted in the council, that the States had confented to the two latter taxes as well as the former. Viglius, and some others of the counfellors, reminded him, that the confent obtained had been granted upon a

CO

W

w

wi

no

int

wi

inh

ate

of

to

dei

pre

pre

wa

of

exp

VIC

per

COL

ed

pro

der

fcer

ple

wit the

Bentivogho, p. 87.

ris

ef-

IS

d

if-

15

n

n-

ad

n-

re

x,

d-

ay

ed

m-

to

to

fe

d.

sel

he

en

th

11

m

he

15,

m,

a

condition which did not yet subsist. But Alva was not in a temper of mind, at this time, in which he could either liften to the truth, or bear with contradiction. They were no better than rebels, he faid, who durst affirm, that the States had not confented. The king's honor, as well as his interest, required, that the taxes should be levied without delay; and he would fuffer himself to be cut in pieces, rather than allow the States to break the promife which they had given him.

He accordingly iffued an edict, requiring all the His edict inhabitants of the Low-Countries to make immedia payment of ate payment of the tenth and twentieth, as well as the taxes. of the hundredth penny, to the officers appointed to receive them. But, as he had promifed to moderate the two former taxes in fuch a manner as to prevent the pernicious consequences that were apprehended, an immunity from the tenth penny was granted to foreign merchants, on the first sale of goods imported; and they were permitted to export them again, without paying this tax, provided the goods had not been transferred from one person to another during their continuance in the country. The fame immunity was likewife granted on the first sale of cattle, corn, and fruits, the produce of the Netherlands.

These immunities, which the governor consi. The consedered as proofs on his part of the greatest conde- quences of this meafcension, had no effect towards reconciling the peo- fure. ple to the taxes, which they believed would, notwithstanding these concessions, be attended with the ruin of their commerce and manufactures.

Vol. I. Aa BOOK X. 1971.

BOOK X. 1571.

Their aversion to them, and their resolution to oppose the levying of them, were as strong as ever. In many towns the people began, almost as foon as the edict was published, to feel a fcarcity of the common necessaries of life. Provifions were not brought to market; nor did the merchants expose their goods to fale as formerly ". These inconveniences were felt in no place more than in Bruffels, where the governor refided. There was an entire stagnation in that city of every species of commercial intercourse. Neither food nor drink could be purchased in it. The shops and workhouses were shut up. The lower fort of people were reduced to despair; and the whole city was overwhelmed with grief and consternation.

its

th

al

th

dil

W

ed

th

ev

VI

na

an

N

me

the

po

tac

cit

tin

ke

Ut

am

the

ge

as.

CO

wh

up

pre

His barbarity.

In this fituation, Alva formed the barbarous resolution of putting to death, before their own houses, seventeen of the principal inhabitants. His foldiers were under arms; the gibbets, the ropes, and the executioners, were prepared, when happily, only a few hours before the time fixed for the execution, a messenger arrived with information that the exiles had made a descent on the island of Vorn, and got possession of the Brille.

The Brille taken by the Exiles

> Alva, thunderstruck with this intelligence, recalled his bloody orders; and refolved, though with much reluctance, to suspend for a time the levving of the taxes. He was deeply sensible of the advantages which the exiles might derive from their acquisition of a place, which, on account of

Bentivoglio, p. 87.

n

ft

a

1-

ne

re

re

e-

or

d

0-

ty

us

vn

lis

s,

p-

ed

in-

on

le.

re-

gh

he

of

m

of

its fituation at the mouth of a great river, and in the neighbourhood of many important cities, had always been confidered as one of the chief keys of the Netherlands. He knew likewife how extremely disaffected the people in the maritime provinces were to his person and government; and he dreaded that other places would follow the example of the Brille, and open their gates to the enemy.

He had the greater reason to be uneasy at this event, as he had not exerted himself with proper vigor to prevent it. He had neglected to form a naval force sufficient to contend with the exiles; and had thereby not only fuffered the trade of the Netherlands to be ruined, but had left his government almost defenceless on that fide, where, from the nature of the power which the protestant exiles possessed, it was in the greatest danger of being attacked. He had not even put garrisons into the cities that were most exposed; but, at the very time when the exiles were hovering on the coaft, kept a numerous body of troops quartered in Utrecht; which, if they had been distributed among the sea coast towns, might have baffled all the attempts of the enemy. Of this supine negligence, in a person of so great vigor and abilities as Alva, no account can be given, but the extreme contempt in which he held the protestant exiles; whom he confidered as fit only to exercise piracy upon merchant ships, but utterly incapable of conducting any important enterprise.

But although he had not taken the necessary precaution to secure himself against their attempts, BOOK X. 1571.

vie

la

the

In

wi

no

lo

att

pu

the

far

D

fen

the

Bu

the

we

Ore

do

ter

po

me

firl

tha

for

the

rit

anı

X.

he bad not been altogether inattentive to their motions. He had complained to the queen of England, of her permitting them to fell openly in her dominions, the goods of which they had robbed the subjects of the king his master. This was in effect giving affiftance, he faid, to the king's rebellious subjects, and was a violation of the treaties which subfifted between the Spanish and English crowns. Elizabeth was fecretly a friend to the Flemish exiles; and she had little reason, and as little inclination, to gratify the defires of Philip, or the duke of Alva. She knew that, for some time past, they had maintained a correspondence with her catholic subjects, and had used their endeavours to disturb her government. But she did not judge it proper at this time to come to an open rupture with Philip. She therefore complied with Alva's request; ordered all ships belonging to such of the inhabitants of the Low Countries, as had withdrawn their allegiance from the king of Spain, to leave her harbours; and forbade her subjects to furnish them with shelter or provisions.

This unlooked-for compliance of Elizabeth, which was matter of great triumph to the duke of Alva, and of equal mortification to the exiles, was attended, in the iffue, with confequences very different from those which were expected. It reduced the exiles to despair; and as they were now thrown off by the only foreign power from which they had received protection, they resolved, if possible, to acquire possession of some place of strength in their native country. Having with this

0-

er

d

in

e-

es

h

e

as

,

e

e

1.

d

n

h

d

0

f

view affembled at Dover, they fet fail with twenty-five ships, under William de Lumey count de la Marck, who had the chief command among them, by commission from the prince of Orange. In their voyage they had the good fortune to meet with two Spanish vessels richly laden, which was no fmall consolation to them in their present forlorn fituation. Thy intended to have made an attempt upon Enchuylen, in North Holland; but the wind being contrary, they were obliged to put into the Maese, where they cast anchor before the town of Brille, on the first of April one thoufand five hundred and feventy-two. The count De la Marck immediately landed his troops, and fent a messenger to summon the inhabitants, in the name of the prince of Orange, to furrender. But as they helitated for some time what answer they should return, he began to suspect that they were preparing to make refistance, and therefore ordered the gates on the north fide to be burnt down. This was done accordingly; and he entered, and took possession of the town without opposition, at the head of only two hundred and fifty onwey their book and board

So accidental and so easily accomplished was the first event of that war, which rendered the Netherlands a scene of horror and devastation for more than thirty years; but which, whilst it proved the source, on many occasions, of extreme distress to the people, called forth an exertion of virtue; spirit, and intrepidity, which seldom occurs in the annals of history. Never was there a more unequal

BOOK X.

re

ca

w

th

tro

the

w

en

tio

va

wi

lea

he

to

qu

pa

de

alt

for

to

tei

no

ing

tin

lie

po

pla

for

BOOK X.

contest than this which was now begun between the inhabitants of the Low-Countries and the Spanish monarch; and never was the issue of any dispute more contrary to what the parties had reason to expect. On the one side, a people, confifting chiefly of manufacturers and merchants, inhabiting a country of small extent, and already much exhausted by a long continued exercise of tyranny and oppression: on the other, the richest monarch of the age, who was mafter of the most numerous and best disciplined forces, commanded by generals distinguished above their contemporaries by their confummate skill in the art of war. Nothing but despair could have made the people of the Low-Countries enter the lifts with an adversary so much superior to them. And it could hardly be supposed that they would not be quickly overwhelmed. But, from the feguel it will appear, how rash it is to conclude with confidence, that because an event is improbable, therefore it will not happen. Allembrooss both

On the next day, after the protestants had made themselves masters of the Brille, they began to convey their booty on board their ships, with the design of proceeding on their voyage to West Friesland; but one of their number, a native of the place, having represented that they could not reasonably expect to find a more commodious settlement elsewhere, the count de la Marck, and all the rest entered readily into his opinion; and they

on hi sinose mobili dolos i substante li ci

REA.

In Treflong. Treflong.

resolved without delay to fortify the town with the BOOK cannon belonging to the fleet.

n)e

Y

d

n÷

1-

y

of

ft

ft

d

es

0-

of

y

y

r-

,

at

11

le

e ſŧ

ρf

ot

t-

11

y

X. 1572. Fruitless attempt to

They had just time to put themselves into a posture of desence, when the count de Bossut ', to whom the duke of Alva had given orders to attack recover the them, arrived in the island with a body of Spanish Brille. troops, collected from Utrecht and other places in the neighbourhood. The count de la Marck. whose forces were much inferior in number to the enemy, remained within the town, with a refolution to defend it to the last. The Spaniards advanced to the walls, and began to batter them with their artillery; when one of the townsmen leapt into a canal, and fwimming a little way till he came to a fluice, which Boffut had neglected to fecure, he broke it down, and let in fuch a quantity of water, that, in a few hours, a great part of the country was overflowed. This did not deter Boffut from the profecution of his enterprife; although it obliged him to remove his forces to the fouth fide of the town, where the ground which led to the principal gate was still uncovered by the water. La Marck had planted there his heaviest cannon; and the Spaniards had little prospect of being able to carry their point foon. In the mean time, two of the boldest leaders of the exiles fallied out with a part of the foldiers from the opposite gate, and marching along the dikes to the place where Boffut had left his thips, they burnt fome of them, funk others, fet the rest adrift, and the iffamult has they were terred

Governor of Holland, white state of the sale

B O O K X. 1572.

then returned fafe to the city. When the Spaniards were advertised of this disaster, and perceived the water round them rifing higher and higher, they were struck with a sudden panic, and betook themfelves with the utmost precipitation to the shore. Most of them made their escape to the opposite coast in some vessels, which the enemy had not time either to let loofe or to destroy; and others, by fwimming till they reached the ships that had been fet adrift; while a confiderable number was swallowed up in the mud and water. Had they been purfued by the enemy, they must all have perished. But La Marck, who was doubtful of the affections of the citizens, thought it dangerous to quit the town, left they should shut the gates, and turn his own artillery against him.

w

of

Bo

WI

Be

he

he

the

ref

no

Half.

to

the

it,

par

ceff

the

gag

till

zen

put

barb

to c

lifter

treat

beco

From this fucces, the protestants derived an increase both of strength and courage. The citizens declared openly in their favor, and they were immediately joined by numbers who slocked to them from all parts of the island. The names of the inhabitants were registered; and they all swore allegiance to the prince of Orange, as the only legal governor of Holland; engaging to defend the town and island in his name, and that of the king, against the duke of Alva and the Spaniards."

This first victory of the protestants was fullied by that favage ferosity, of which there are many instances in the present war. The Monks knowing how obnoxious they were to the conquerors, endeavoured to make their escape from the island; but they were seized in their slight, treated in the most cruel and contumelious manner, and afterwards

Is

1e

y

n-

e.

te

ot

S.

be

as

y

re

of

us

s,

n-

ns

n-

m

ne

re

ly

bi

he .

at

he

re m

in ds

their way.

Their example quickly diffused the spirit by BOOK which they were actuated, and ferved as a fignal of revolt to other places. Of this the count De Boffut foon received a convincing proof. Having with great difficulty passed over from Vorn to Beyerland, he led his troops towards Dort, where he intended to refresh them after the fatigue which they had undergone. But the inhabitants having heard of his repulse at the Brille, and dreading, that he might compel them to pay the taxes, they resolved, whatever should be the consequence, to refuse him admittance into the city. As he was not in a condition to employ force, he marched directly to Rotterdam.

There too he found the people equally averse Boffut's to the admission of the Spaniards; but after affuring the magistrates that he meant only to lead of Rotterthem through the town, and not to lodge them in it he persuaded them to suffer the several companies to pass through it, one by one. The magistrates had reason quickly to repent of this conceffion. No fooner had the first company entered the city, than Boffut, without regard to his engagement, ordered them to keep the gates open, till the other companies should arrive. The citizens reproached him with his treachery, and put to death. The exiles were too much inflamed by the barbarous treatment which they themselves had received, to distinguish between the innocent and the guilty, or to listen either to the dictates of humanity, or of that religion

for which they professed such ardent zeal. Having been treated as wild beafts by their enemies, they had now

become fuch, and tore in pieces every thing that fell in

1573

tel

ev

the

no

OC

reg

eve

to

aga

Wit

em

1

acc

has

tow

tion

who

to r

atte

that

rifo

fold

loss caus

now

ing, befo

pani man

воок

X.

attempted to flut the gates by force. He had hitherto been held in esteem for his moderation; but, being chagrined on this occasion, by the mifcarriage of his attempt against the protestants at the Brille, and incenfed by the affront which had been offered him, first by the people of Dort, and fince by those of Rotterdam, he resolved to wreak his vengeance upon the latter, and showed his foldiers what he wished them to do, by killing with his own hand one of the citizens, who was endeavouring to shut the gate. His troops, eager to follow his example, drew their fwords, attacked the city-guards, flew fome of them, and drove the rest out of the city; then giving a loose to their fury, they spread themselves over the town, and butchered more than three hundred of the inhabitants ".

This shocking deed was no less impolitic, than it was savage and barbarous; and added suel to that slame which Bossut, as governor of the province, ought to have been at the utmost pains to extinguish. It required but little discernment to perceive the necessity of employing the mildest expedients with the maritime provinces. There were no citadels or Spanish garrisons in the towns of these provinces. The soldiers who had been quartered in them, had been drawn off at different times, for the punishment of the people of Utrecht. The situation of most of the towns, surrounded by the sea, or by the rivers and canals, rendered it extremely difficult to besiege them; and the pro-

Meursii Auriacus, p. 75. Bentivoglio, p. 91.

testants, who could have easy access by water to BOOK every part of the country, were greatly superior to the Spaniards in naval force. The people were not ignorant of these advantages; and they refolved to avail themselves of them on the present occasion. The massacre at Rotterdam made them regard Boffut and the Spaniards with horror; and even those who wished to maintain their allegiance to the king of Spain, were determined to guard against the entrance of his troops within their walls, with the same vigilance which they would have employed against an open foe.

11-

1;

if-

ne

en

be

to

ed

ng

ras

ger

ac-

nd

ofe

he

of

an

to

ro-

to

to

ex-

ere

of

ar-

ent

cht.

by

lit

oro-

This spirit appeared first at Flushing; which, on Revote of account of its fituation near the mouth of the Scheld, Flushing. has long been reckoned one of the most important towns in the Netherlands. Among the last instructions which the emperor delivered to his fon, when he refigned his dominions, he advised him to make this place an object of his particular care. and to spare no expense to secure it against the attempts of his enemies. Alva had not bestowed that attention on it, which a place of fo much consequence deserved. He had weakened the garrison, by ordering all of them but eighty Walloom foldiers, to take up their quarters in Utrecht. The loss of the Brille, which was owing to the fame cause, had made him sensible of his error. He now therefore resolved to finish a citadel at Flushing, of which he had laid the foundation fome time before; and with this view he ordered eight companies of Spaniards to go there, under the command of an experienced officer. The citizens

1572.

воок х.

I 572.

beheld the chains which were thus forging for them, with deep concern. They dreaded th' confequences which might arise to their trade. They were not entirely free from apprehensions of being treated in the same manner as the people of Utrecht and Rotterdam. They doubted not that, fooner or later, the garrison, which was about to be stationed in the town, would be employed to compel them to make payment of the taxes; and they were emboldened by the fuccess of the protestants in the ifle of Vorn. While their minds were in this agitation, there arrived among them some partifans of the prince of Orange, who had come on purpose to exhort them to affert their liberty. Instigated by these men, the populace ran to arms, and obliged the feeble remains of the garrifon to quit the city.

On the next day, the Spanish forces arrived in the harbour. The people were assembled in the streets, and upon the walls; and were still in some measure unresolved as to their suture conduct. The protestants, and other friends of the prince of Orange, remonstrated to them on the absurdity of hesitating, after they had begun hostilities. "By expelling the garrison," cried one of them, "you have already done what the Spaniards will undoubtedly interpret to be high treason against their king. Consider well to whose mercy you expose yourselves. Remember the sate of the counts Horn and Egmont, and consider whether either your merit or your innocence has equalled theirs." The protestants employed another method to

th cit da

fol

gle to and den him the recellet of as f

pub gun fuad coul by of ti the five

ately

fet

impress the minds of the vulgar. They caused proclamation to be made by found of trumpet, that the Spanish garrison was at hand, and that all the citizens must hold their effects, their wives and daughters, in readiness for their use 17.

When men are balancing between contrary refolutions, the smallest weight is sufficient sometimes to turn the scale. A man in liquor, who had mingled with the crowd, offered for a small reward to fire one of the great guns upon the Spaniards; and he did it accordingly, on receiving three guilders from one of the protestants who stood near him. From that instant, the people were fixed in their purpose. The Spaniards, astonished at their reception, and utterly unprepared to employ force, let slip their cables, and sailed for Middleburgh.

In that city resided Anthony de Burgoine, lord of Wackené, the governor of the province; who, as soon as he was informed of what had happened, set out for Flushing, and on his arrival there, having called together all the inhabitants into the most public part of the town, he employed every argument addressed to their hopes and sears, to persuade them to return to their allegiance. But they could not listen now to any thing but the passions by which they were inflamed. Their abhorrence of the Spanish tyranny was now wrought up to the greatest height; and the governor, apprehensive of danger from their unbridled sury, immediately left the town.

or

e-

y

g

ht or

nel

ey

in

ne

ne

y.

15,

to

in

the

me

ict.

nce

ity

By

ou

un-

ofe

ints

her

to

BOOK X.

1572

¹⁷ Reidanus, p. 10.

BOOK X. Z572.

Soon after his departure they pulled up the foundations of the new citadel, and drove out the persons to whom the charge of building it had been committed. In a few days afterwards they gave a still stronger proof of their resolution never to return under the Spanish government. Don Pedro Pacheco, who had been appointed governor of Flushing, having been detained some days behind the troops, was ignorant of what had passed, and entered the harbour under a belief that his foldiers were in the town to receive him. The people ran to arms, and having feized and plundered his ship, they cast him and his attendants into prison. Among papers which were found in his possession, it is faid, that they met with evidence of his having come with a defign to exercise in Flushing the wonted tyranny of the Spaniards; and this difcovery, added to the circumstance of his being nearly related to the duke of Alva, prompted them to form the barbarous resolution of putting him to death. He offered to pay them a rich ranfom for his life, and to remain their prisoner; but they rejected his proposal. He then begged that they would respect the nobility of his birth, and put him to death by the fword, rather than by the halter. Even this request was denied him. Their minds were grown favage, from the bloody scenes which had of late been fo often acted before them; and they rejoiced in the opportunity which they possessed of wreaking their vengeance on the duke of Alva, by inflicting a difgraceful punishment on his kinfman.

wh be qui goy pos bor Th niti and the anc fron hun wer Scot of t fleet expe befo upor decl hith inlif

> 1 cient likev town was inhal

to v

chief

he

he

en

a

re-

lro

of

nd

nd

ers

ran

ip,

on.

on,

av-

the

co-

ear-

to

to

for

re-

ney

put

the

neir

nes

em;

hey

uke

on

They were aware of the consequences with BOOK which this conduct, fo violent and hostile, must be attended; and, as they knew that it would quickly draw upon them the whole weight of the governor's refentment, they omitted nothing in their power to secure themselves against it. They labored incessantly to strengthen their fortifications. They imported privately from Antwerp, ammunition and provisions, which they laid up in store; and they applied to the prince of Orange, and to the protestants in France and England for assistance. Some troops were immediately fent them from France, by count Lewis of Nassau; and five hundred Flemish exiles came from England, who were foon afterwards followed by two hundred Scotch and English volunteers, under the command of two adventurers, Morgan and Balfour. Their fleet received an augmentation where they did not expect it. The duke of Alva having, fome months before, fitted out a number of velfels to cruife upon the coast, the commanders of these vessels now declared in favor of the party which they had hitherto opposed; and, setting fail for Flushing. inlifted under the banners of the count de Tserart. to whom the prince of Orange had given the chief command of all the forces in the province.

Tserart foon found himself possessed of suffi- Revolt of cient strength, not only to defend Flushing, but other towns likewife to attempt the reduction of the other towns in Zealand. With most of these towns, there was very little occasion for employing force. The inhabitants of Campyere, Armuyden, and some

X. 1572.

BOOK X. other places, were no less inclined to revolt than the people of Flushing; and in a few days the whole province, except Middleburgh and the castle of Rammekins, declared against the Spanish government, and received garrisons from Tserart.

The fiege of Middleburgh.

In Middleburgh too, the greatest part of the inhabitants would gladly have followed the example of the other towns; but they were over-awed by the garrison. Tserart laid siege to this city, and expected foon to have got possession of it. The garrison was weak, and as the exiles were masters at fea, he hoped, by their means, to intercept any reinforcement which might be fent from the continent. The duke of Alva was fensible of the great importance of the place, and resolved, if possible, to relieve it. For this purpose, he ordered Sancho D'Avila, one of his bravest officers, to carry thither a thousand select soldiers, partly Walloons and partly Spaniards, whom he mingled together, as he did on many occasions afterwards, that he might the more effectually excite their emulation; and to these a great number of officers and persons of rank joined as volunteers, that they might partake of the glory of so dangerous an enterprise.

D'Avila left Bergen-op-zoom in the end of April, and had a prosperous navigation down the Scheld. He was desirous to land his troops on the nearest part of the island, as from thence he would have had the shortest march to Middleburgh. But the enemy having received intelligence of his design, had drawn to gether a powerful fleet to oppose

him.

fe

ol

th

lo

a

op

me

fet

tio

to

the

Th

im

WI

fall

don

bein

exc

Can

Ir

raife

fupe

ing

the

fhou

furre

hund

failor

X.

1573.

him. He was obliged therefore to keep out to BOOK fea on the north fide of the island, and to fetch a compass round, till he came to that part of it which is washed by the ocean. The landing there was difficult by reason of the flats and shallows, which made it necessary for him to march a great way in the water; but, as he met with no opposition from the enemy, he at last brought his men all fafe on shore. Then having immediately fet out with a chosen band, to examine the situation of the enemy, and having found that, trufting to the fleet, they had taken no precaution for their defence, he ordered all his forces to advance. They ran forward to the attack with the utmost impetuofity. The beliegers were overwhalmed with aftonishment. The garrison at the same time fallied out upon them from the city. They abandoned their trenches almost without resistance; and being hemmed in on every fide, all of them. except a few, who escaped to Flushing and Campvere, were put to the fword ...

In this manner was the fiege of Middleburgh raised. But as the protestants still retained their Superiority at sea, they hoped, that by surrounding the island with their ships, and intercepting the fupplies which might be fent to it, they should soon be able to compel the garrison to furrender. Their fleet consisted of no less than one hundred and fifty armed veffels, manned with failors who were much more expert than any

VOL. L

ian

he

fle

go-

in-

ple

by

ind

he

ers

iny

on-

the

if

ler-

to

Val-

to-

ds,

heir

cers

hey

en-

of

the

the

uld

But de-

ose

n.

ВЪ

whom the duke of Alva could procure. Their maritime enterprises were for this reason almost X. 1572. always attended with fuccess, and they did incre-

dible mischief to the Spaniards at sea; while at land, having only raw troops to oppose to regular and well-disciplined forces, they were seldom able to look them in the face.

in

OI

th

th all

Ro

at

ers

na

its

had

bo

fire the

adv

defi

of

mai

as. 3

tem fupp

the

veye

land of e

der i

office T

exiles at fea. July 10th.

Success of the At this time, when the fea was covered with their ships, and almost every entrance to the ports of the Low Countries blocked up, the duke of Medina-Cœli arrived upon the coast. This nobleman had been fent by Philip to succeed the duke of Alva, who, on account of his health, had applied for liberty to return to Spain. Medina-Celi had brought with him fifty ships, having two thousand Spanish soldiers on board, but as he knew nothing of the late transactions in the maritime provinces, and had no suspicion that the protestants possessed such a considerable naval force, he fell unawares into the midst of their fleet. Twenty - five of the largest of his ships were taken. Some of them escaped to Rammekins and Middleburgh, and he himfelf got with difficulty into Sluys, in Flanders. The exiles found on board the ships which they took, two hundred thousand guilders in specie; and the ships, with the effects which they contained, were valued at five hundred thousand ".... the hundred thousand "....

Their next success was in an attack upon a fleet of twenty ships, which the duke of Alva

Meursil Auriacus, p. 88.

X.

intended to fend to Middleburgh, with troops, BOOK ordnance, pikes, and gunpowder, for the use of the garrison. The exiles attacked these ships before they had left the harbour, and having taken them all, they carried them, together with the military ftores, to Flushing.

Another fleet, fitted out for the same purpose, at Sluys, was equally unfortunate. The Zealanders being informed by their partifans of the destination of this fleet, and of the time fixed for its departure, took three ships, in the short run betwixt Sluys and the ifle of Walcheren, and had the courage to purfue the rest into the harbour of Rammekins, where, notwithstanding the fire of the garrison, they took some, and burnt the rest.

They were not so successful in their next adventure. It had been the chief object of their desire for some time, to make themselves masters of Middleburgh; because, while that city remained in the hands of the Spaniards, the whole island was subject to perpetual alarm. They had, as we have just now seen, defeated several attempts which the duke of Alva made to introduce supplies, and now the town of Tergoes was the only channel by which they could be conveyed. Tergoes is the capital of South Beveland, and was defended at this time by a garrison of eight hundred Walloons and Spaniards, under the command of Isidore Pacheco, a Spanish officer. Present osseler I as all lion

To this town Tserart, general of the Zealanders, Tergoes

B b 2

with the the Chis the lth, linaving it as

the

eir

floi

cre-

at

ular

ble

that naval fleet. were and culty d on ndred with red at

on a -Alva

X. 1572. towards the end of fum-

BOOK had, some time after his repulse from Middleburgh, laid fiege; but upon a false report of the approach of the Spaniards, he had hastily raised the fiege, and left the island. He now returned to it, with an army of near eight thousand men, most of whom were German, French, and English

qu

is

lik

po

an

CO

the

to

the

Ze

we

fell

tha

the

obl

tua

tha

pro

alo

the

to

tun

his

not

the

1

able

nati

the

10:

protestants.

As the garrison was no match in the field for fo great a force, Tserart had landed in the island without opposition, and, having immediately invested the town, he pressed forward the siege with great vigor. The belieged made several brisk sallies to retard his approach; but notwithstanding their most vigorous efforts, Tserart had opened his batteries, and made some breaches in the wall. The fiege had lasted for several weeks, and Pacheco began to perceive that it would not be possible for him to hold out much longer.

Of this he had given early notice to the duke of Alva; nor was the duke less intent upon relieving him, than he had reason to expect. The diftinguished bravery of the garrison and their commander; the reproach which would accompany the fuffering them to fall a prey to the enemy; above all, the great importance of the place, the loss of which would draw after it that of Middleburgh, and the whole province of Zealand; these considerations excited all the governor's attention, and determined him to apply with ardor to prepare the fuccour which Pacheco had folicited. He ordered feveral regiments of his best troops to assemble from different

quarters at Bergen-op-zoom, from whence there BOOK is a short run down the Scheld to Beveland. He likewise sent thither a sufficient number of transports with stores of ammunition and provisions; and appointed D'Avila and Mondragone " to conduct them to the garrison of Tergoes. A delivery

dle-

the

ifed

ned

nen,

lish

for

and

in-

ege

eral

ith-

had

s in

eks,

ould

ger.

uke

pon

The

heir

om-

the

the

r it

ince the

ap-

hich

regirent

These men exerted themselves strenuously in the execution of the trust that was committed to them; and attempted several times to force their way through the enemy's fleet. But the Zealanders watched their motions fo attentively, were fo much more expert in failing, and posfessed a naval force so much superior to theirs? that all their attempts were baffled; and, to fave their ships from being funk, they were frequently obliged to return, without being able to effectuate their purpose. D'Avila once flattered himself that he had discovered an expedient that would prove fuccessful. He planted batteries of cannon along the banks of the Scheld; hoping to keep the enemy at a distance from the shore, and thus to give Mondragone, with the troops, an opportunity of paffing. But the event did not answer his expectation. The banks were wet, and did not allow of his coming near enough to annoy the enemy.

The Spanish generals began to despair of being Plumares able to execute their defign, when Plumart, a proposal for native of the province, but zealously attached to fiege. the Spanish interest, proposed another method

Two of his most experienced officers.

of

th

pr

CO

Ve

th

qu

int

OV the

fat

too

wh tar

by

eve

ene

rea rea

tion of

tain

ford tria

fant

the ford

othe

any

1572.

of transporting the forces, which at first appeared impracticable, although it was afterwards embraced. In order to form a clear conception of Plumart's proposal, it is necessary to attend to the fituation of the country, and the change which some years before it had undergone. The ifle of South Beveland, to which the Spanish general found it fo difficult to transport their troops, is only feven miles distant from a tract of land, to which they could have had eafy access from Bergen-op-zoom. This tract of land, which is divided from Brabant by the Easter Scheld and from Flanders by the Hondt, or Wester Scheld, was once a part of Beveland, and was separated from it by a dreadful inundation in the year one thousand, five hundred and thirty - two; when the fea broke down the dikes, and burst violently across the island, cutting off from it the corner which lay nearest to Brabant, and covering it from north to fouth, that is from the Easter to the Wester Scheld. with water, which the inhabitants were never able to exclude. The space overflowed was, at the narrowest, seven Italian miles broad. It could not be croffed in boats even at high-water, by reason of the flats and shallows; and at low water it was thought unfordable, on account of the miry bottom, and the channels of feveral rivulets, which many persons still remember to have feen in it, before it was overflowed.

It was there, however, that Plumart thought it practicable for the troops to pass over on foot,

red

em-

of

to

nge

The

dlin

heir

ract

afy

ind,

fter

or

nd.

ida-

lred

the

cut-

to

ith,

eld,

ver

at

ould

by

low

of

eral

to

ight

oot,

X,

1574-

to the relief of the garrison of Tergoes; and he BOOK offered to lead the way, and conduct them in their passage. The character of the man, whose prudence and fidelity were well-known to the commanders, was the only circumstance that prevented them from regarding his proposal as chimerical. No person had ever attempted to pass that way before. They themselves were unacquainted with the face of the country before the inundation. They only knew the length of space over which the troops must pass; and no troops, they believed, would be able to support the fatigue of fo long a march in water, and perhaps too in mud and clay. Besides, that, by accidents which could not be foreseen, they might be retarded in their passage, till they were overtaken by the rifing tide, and buried in the waves; and, even although this should not happen, yet the enemy might be apprized of their defign, and be ready to fall upon them, as foon as they should reach the land.

Plumart was not discouraged by these objecttions. He defired that no mention might be made of his propofal, till he should know with certainty whether there was not in reality fuch a ford as he imagined. He then went to make the trial, accompanied by two Spaniards, and a peafant who was well acquainted with the face of the country before the inundation. He found the ford which he fought for; arrived fafe on the other fide, and returned, without encountering any greater difficulties than he expected, and will

Bb 4

BOOK X. 1372.

D'Avila and Mondragone did not hesitate after this to comply with his advice. They immediately prepared a number of fmall bags, which they filled with biscuit, gunpowder and matches; and transported three thousand of the best troops, Germans, Walloons, and Spaniards, from Bergenop-zoom to Agger, a village which lies near the entrance of the ford. Mondragone took upon himself the conducting of this extraordinary expedition. When the time proper for entering upon it was arrived, he ordered the troops to advance towards the ford; and having distributed the bags among them, he then disclosed his intention; gave them an account of the discovery which had been made by Plumart and his companions; and represented the glory which they would acquire by performing, in the fervice of the church and of the king, fuch an exploit as had never been achieved by any army in the world before. The foldiers, full of that intrepid spirit by which the Spanish troops were so highly distinguished in the present war, and proud of being selected from their companions for fo dangerous an enterprife, received this unexpected information with every symptom of joy, and called out to Mondragone to lead them forward without delay.

n

d

fo

ei

th

W

m

ec

th

in

th

hi

th

by

N

re

That they might have the more time for their passage, they began to enter the water when the sea was going back. The Spaniards, with Plumart and Mondragone at their head, marched first, the Germans next, and last of all the Walloons. They were ordered to keep as close

after

mme-

which

tches:

roops,

ergen-

ir the

upon

expe-

upon

vance

e bags

gave

been

nd re-

cquire

h and

been

. The

ch the

in the

from

rprife,

every

agone

their

when

with

arched

ll the

close

as possible to each other, that they might the more easily succour one another, if any of them should fall into deeper water, or be entangled in the mud. They were not without apprehensions of the tide returning upon them, and therefore they moved forward as fast as the surrounding element and the slimy bottom would allow. Nine men only perished through satigue, or their neglect of the order which had been given them to keep close to their companions. All the rest arrived safe at the dike of Yersicken, a village only four miles distant from Tergoes. There Mondragone ordered them to repose themselves during the night, and resolved to lead them, at break of day, to the relief of the besieged.

But he had already done all that was necessary for this purpose, and had no occasion to expose either himself or his men to further danger. When the beliegers were informed of his arrival, they were filled with consternation. Under that amazement into which they were thrown by fo unexpected an event, they regarded the Spaniards as more than men. They did not take time to inquire into their number; but having immediately raifed the fiege, they left their baggage and artillery behind them, and betook themselves precipitately to the shore. Eight hundred were killed in their flight by the garrison, and many more perished in the water, in attempting to get on board their ships. Mondragone then entered Tergoes; where he was received by the garrison, with every demonstration

remained there till he had given directions for strengthening the fortifications of the place, he left a part of his troops with the governor, and returned with the rest to Brabant, to join the duke of Alva ".

Bentivoglio; p. 110. Meuriji Auriacus, p. 89.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

enognical to 2 DE 64 mail man, said of the control
a line he had already doud all that was need in

. begand all to toller out of

for this campais, and had no ecca

riefe to their graphingue. All the reft strived

when he had on his more if facilities danger. When were the twink conferences. Under this enrived, they were the door his enrived, they were the two what they were thrown by fore as not of an east, they regarded the Species as more than men. They did not take time to inquire more can marker; but having immediately railed the face and entitlery between them and betook themselves are invested to the face theory they had not been think handred were killed in their fight handred were killed in their fight water, in attempting to zet on board their flips.

Whomkapping then entered here has where he was received by the garrifon, will every demonstration received by the garrifon, will every demonstration

aving
s for
e, he
, and
duke

t cant transit t transit transit transit transit transit transit transit t transit transit transit tra

۵